



THE NARCISSIST

## PROLOGUE

I came back home Frustrated and Depressed. Another interview gone wrong. My mother was sitting outside in the sun feeding my daughter who is now 3 years old, Soft porridge....

My daughter was wearing a vest that she used to wear when she was 12 months old. It was small now and covered half of her tummy. She was also wearing a nappy that seemed full of nothing but urine..

I had the file with my CVs and the 6 months course certificate that I did and completed. Can't get a job with that. I've been trying for a while now..

I am the second born out of two brothers. My older brother is working, Lives in the suburbs and his wife alienated him from us. He doesn't even send a cent, If he does it'll be R500 only and that depends on his evil wife. How she feels.. We've long told him about her, But he thought we were evil and just didn't like her, So he hardly comes home..

My younger Brother, He is doing nothing with his life. Hooked on Nyoape, Stole things at home and still stealing things from neighbours. Our only choice was to to put him in the outside shack, Because if we didn't. Then our house would be empty..

Nothing exciting in his room, Only a bed and blankets that smell worse that a dog's urine. Another major reason why Mom and I put him

out, Was because of my Daughter's safety... We don't trust my younger brother, And we can't trust he wouldn't rape my Daughter, Myself or My mom one day.

He doesn't listen, The last time we tried to reprimand him. He pulled out a knife on us, Helped by his Nyoape friend that he got as his backup...

It's difficult being 29 years old with a 2 year old and a Mother that you need to take care of..

The social grant money I get for my Daughter has to be split. Food at home, Toiletries then her..

My mother saw from a distance, when I was

walking through the gate that I wasn't okay. I went to my bedroom, It's a 4 roomed house. Mom has her own room, Then the other one is for me and my Daughter..

I went into my bedroom, Closed the door. Took off my worn out heels where the sole of the shoe you just pray it doesn't come off..

I threw the file on the floor, Threw myself on the bed and just cried..

My name is Nomusa (Musa) Mhlongo, And my story starts now

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

01

MUSA

I heard one knock and the door opened, It was my Mom. She closed it again and came to sit on the bed next to me, She sat by my feet and took a long pause before she could say something..

Mom: I raised you and your Brothers,  
Ndindodwa. Bheka manje all 3 of you have  
grown up

All of us we have different Fathers, None of  
them stuck around..

Mom: I know uPakiso didn't turn out well, But ngizamile ngani noyi 3 (I've tried my best with the 3 of you)

Me: Lesedi is 3 years old Ma. She's slow. Her peers are already being potty trained, At least they know how to say a few general words. Lesedi yena, She's not even trying anything. Even teething she delayed. Soon she'll be 6 and have to go to school, I'm seeing the signs. Lesedi is a slow child, She needs a special school. Those are expensive. Uthathela kude (She's too slow)

Mom: Angingabazi lokho (I'm not denying) but she's still 3 years old. Let's wait and see at least until she's 8, See how she turns out so we can know if she does need lezo zinto ze special school

She sighed..

Mom: Musa I know you trying, I know it's hard but as I always tell you. Rather suffer until you get there, You my Daughter and I'm proud of you. Proud of you even when you not there yet, The only disappointment I'll get from you is using a man to get you out of here. I know your peers some are working, Some come from different homes where the family is united. Some have Men who do everything for them. The latter, Will and might make you seem like it'll be more easier that the other two. To get a financial stable Man to help you through this than it'll be easy for you to get a job. Especially with our messed up economy and high unemployment rate, But like I always tell you about me.. When I was young too, I had a best friend. She wasn't book smart but she loved



education. I remember she went to night school, After failing matric. She still flunked in night school trying to upgrade her marks. She flunked twice in night school but the 3rd time she got the marks that were needed for her to do Teaching or Nursing. We used to laugh at her etc, 17:00 she'll be going to school whilst we were going to our boyfriends. By then I had already met Menzi's father. He was a cop and I thought a man was an easier access to a good life than me actually working hard. I was 20 when I had your Brother Menzi. It didn't help much because ekhaya we were 4 girls. My Mom as soon as we turned 16, She told us "I have 4 girls, We won't suffer. Girls have something that can make them money, A gold mine. Let the man dig your mine, And pay". Getting a financial stable man between my sisters and I was the biggest competition. Menzi's father did all for me and my family. All I had to do was look good and give the best sex to keep him. It was not

until he cheated and the lady used african chemistry to get him. I went back home with Menzi. I should've learned there but I didn't. I was already used to the life of a man doing everything for me. Menzi's father was a cheat and a drunk but not abusive, I was able to get money from him whenever he was drunk holding his card etc.. I then met the trickiest Man, Your father. A township thug, Who made things happen. With him, He was feared and heavily involved in crime. He did everything for me, Waze wangilobola (Took out my bride price). This house we live in, He bought it for me and he didn't mind raising Menzi. Unfortunately with him, He was physically abusive too. He was gunned down, Died a painful death. I lived with you and Menzi here, No source of income. Your younger brother came, Pakiso. With him, His father was casual and married. I needed money to support you kids and unfortunately he left me at some point.

Moved away with his wife and kids to another province. When his wife found out about the affair, He chose her over me. Actually wanted me to abort Pakiso..

Look Musa, I'm not trying to detect how you should live your life. I won't say don't do this and that, Because I did it too. Had my Mother been a good mother to me I probably would've made something out of myself but I didn't. Remember the night school friend? She's not even a Nurse now, She's a matron. I sit everyday and wish I could turn back the years then I would've made something out of myself.. The girl we were laughing at, Thinking she was stupid, She beat all odds and actually made something of herself..

I don't want you following my footsteps. Yes

these Men with money, They will afford you. It'll seem as an easy way out for now until in the long run. What I'm telling you now, I wished my Mother would've told me. I'm 57 with 3 kids and all 3 of you it's because of my failures. Yes Menzi is working good but he's not happy. He's been through a lot, But Through it all, He's made something of himself.. Pakiso is hooked on Nyoape. Please sthandwa Sam, Don't even think a man will be your gateway or an easy way out. Uphi uTata ka Lesedi? (Where is your baby daddy). He doesn't even acknowledge that he has a daughter, No he doesn't acknowledge he has kids. You not the first girl he's had a baby with. He's taking no care of all his kids..

Askies Mami, Kuzodlula. Kuzobangcono, Isimo siyaguquka (Things change)

She got up and left my room...

KENZO (KEN)

I looked at him. He was in nothing but his boxers. Blood bath on the white ceramic tiles. Windows closed. He was crying for mercy, When he tried raising his voice so I could pardon his sins he would start coughing up blood. When we started, He had his hand tightly pressed against his ribs. Now, He has ran out of energy, He didn't know which part of his body to press. His face was swollen, Bruises all over his body and bleeding. His left eye swollen and shut. His right eye, Swollen but not shut..

Spura: Mangife Nkosi!! Mangife (Can I die)

We started this at 9am, Now it was 16:00.. I didn't want him to die yet, I wanted him to die a painful death..

My name is Kenzo, I own 2 Pub & grills in a hood and two restaurants including bars, And mini casinos in town. Spura was working in one of my pub & grills in the hood, Just your normal township druggie that I gave a chance to make something of himself. He used to collect empty bottles, Cans and clean around the pub...

2 days ago he stole 6 of my most expensive tequilas. The Azul tequila. One bottle costs R 3 200. This fucker stole 6, So he owes me R19 200..

The fact that he stole the bottles is not what makes me angry, What makes me angry is that

he sold each bottle around the hood for R150..  
A bottle I sell for fucken R 3 200..

Spura: Ngixolele Grootmaan!! Ngixolele Bhoza  
yam. Cabangela iOlady lam Bhoza! (Forgive me  
please, Forgive me. Think of my Mother)

Barbie walked in.. She looked at Spura, Looked  
at me and my guys..

Barbie: Ken, Sound on. Ngeke bazwe fokol ku  
main floor (The sound is on, They won't hear  
anything in the main floor)

She walked out and closed the door..

I pointed the gun at Spura..

Spura: Yoooh cela uMama awuthole umzimba wam ke Grootmaan, Mangife nje ngenja mara Bangangicwabi njengenja ( May my Mother please find my body, Let me die like a dog, But let me not be buried like one)

I pulled the trigger. Hit him with 6 bullets..

It was then quiet in the storage room..

Me: Ksasa ek'seni before ilanga liphuma, Imbuzi iwe (Tomorrow morning before the sun rises, May the goat be slaughtered)

I took out my handkerchief, Wiped the gun and tossed it to one of my guys.



I walked up to Spura and closed his eyes..

Me: Clean the mess! Make sure his mother finds his body

MUSA

I got out of my bedroom after feeling sorry for myself. I needed to cook, My daughter has to eat. In the vegetable rack we had an onion, Tomatoes and potatoes. Pap and tomato gravy was going to be the easiest meal. I checked, The tomatoes were halfway to getting rotten, The onion was rotten and smelling bad. I took them, Took the knife to cut off the rotten parts and rinsed them..

We had no cooking oil, I'll have to improvise with water, I don't know how they were going to taste but we will have to do..

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

02

KENZO (KEN)

After the whole ordeal Barbie drove up to our apartment to get me clean clothes. Barbie is my girlfriend, We've been together for quite some time now.. It would raise questions with my showing up at the main floor with clothes that have blood stains, Especially not when I love white t-shirts and sneakers so much..

We have a grill in our kitchen, Where the meat is prepared. We also have a braai stand outside that we use, For when it gets full. Burning my clothes in the braai stand outside seemed like the best idea, So nothing cannot be led back to me..

I took it upon myself to handle what was going on in the braai stand outside, The sneakers were the ones that created an unpleasant smell. The flames were still a bit high and uncontrollable for me to put the chicken on, But very relieved that the clothes have caught fire..

Barbie walked up to me..

Barbie: K.K

I am called KK, Because of my name and surname. "Kenzo Khaba".. Only by those who know what I'm about and respect me..

Me: Yaa?

Barbie: Kurai is here.. She's with company

I paused what I was doing...

Barbie: Friends and a male, He uhm.. He seems rich

I had an instant flashback..

Kurai is my baby sister, And we didn't have the best nor normal childhood. Mom was an alcoholic, And also hooked up on drugs. Very abusive and drove our father crazy that he left. When Dad left, She was broke. Couldn't settle her drug addiction bills, And our step father was dealing. Somehow they started dating He was abusive too, Given authority by my Mother. I remember him sexually abusing Kurai. Mom was always high and drunk, Even when I told her in a sober state she didn't take me serious. Our step father was a nightmare, When I tried fighting him at one point, I got the beating of my life. That's when I saw that no one was going to help us, Even neighbours and relatives were scared to intervene. He was feared.. I had to leave home and try something out, That was the only way to save Kurai. The biggest fuckery of it all, Bastard died from an overdose before I could get to him. Mom, She's in a rehabilitation center. Long term drug use affected her

mentally, I have been paying reasonable money just to keep her there until she dies..

Kurai lives with Barbie and I, Kinda promiscuous. She's a social media influencer, Something I don't like because she is a vessel for rich married men. You look at your Mihlali and them, She's that on social media...

Kinda difficult reprimanding her because of what she went through, Or rather what we went through as kids. Basically Kurai is the only woman and Person that makes me forget that I'm KK..

Barbie: Ken?

Me: Sorry about that

Barbie: Lost you there for a moment

Me: I'll handle it

Barbie is also into this influencing thing, but Unlike Kurai she only showcases her life etc. Pictures, Holidays and having fun with friends..

I actually met Barbie through Kurai...

Me: Just make sure that everything is gone in there before they lay down the chicken..

MUSA

I gave Pakiso his plate at the door without letting him in..

Pakiso: Sharp suster

I then locked up as he left to his room at the back. Mom was feeding Lesedi..

Me: I hope iGravy ayikho yimbi kakhulu (I hope the gravy is not too bad)

Mom: Chaa imandi (It's delicious)

I took my plate and sat down..

Me: We need to start potty training uLesedi Ma



Mom: So far the R2 nappies from the Pakistan shops are not giving her any rash, But I'll start tomorrow

Me: Thank you Ma for everything and helping me ngo Sedi

Ma: I only do it so you can be able to focus on finding a job, I love Sedi and I don't mind

We continued eating..

Ma: What happened exactly at the interview?

Me: Experience killed me and some of the questions they were just impossible

Ma: It's okay Nana, You'll find something

Me: I don't care what job it is, So long we can be able to eat

Ma: I know Nana.. Kuzolunga

KENZO (KEN)

I walked to main floor, It was busy. Fridays, Saturdays and Sundays are our busy times. It was Friday today..

They were sitting by the VIP section. You can reserve that Vip table and you'll get the deserved Vip treatment. My girls held up the

bottles of Azul to go put on their table. Kurai was wearing a short dress, One leg crossed up to his..

I looked at him, He looked older. I bit my tongue..

Kurai: Hey

She got up and came to hug me..

Kurai: Please don't embarrass me

We walked closer...

Kurai: Ken meet my boyfriend Jazzini, Jazzini this is my Brother Kenzo

He got up, I looked at him coming to me.  
Looked at his hand, Ring mark lighter than the  
colour of his hand. Bastard is married...

Jazz: Ken

He shook my hand, I squeezed it tight..

Jazz: Well that's a firm handshake

Kurai: My Brother owns this place

Jazz: Good place to kick back and relax in the  
hood

Me: I hope you guys are having fun, The bottles are on me

Jazz: I... I don't wanna ruin your profit

Me: I insist

Jazz: I am not a uhm.. I'm not a charity case

Kurai: Come on Ken.. He's here to support

I faked a smile..

Me: Of course.. Of course, Well I hope you guys will enjoy

I walked away sweating.. Barbie was standing by the bar..

Barbie: You handled that well, I am p-

Me: Don't patronize me, I'm not your friend.. Call Ace! I'll be in my office investigating this guy

MUSA

I shook my head..

Me: What a shame

Mom: Yini? (What)

Me: Sedi's father. He is showing off his new car on social media, Doesn't even send a cent for Sedi

Mom: Don't torture yourself with him, Block him

Me: I just don't get it.. Noma yi R500 ke?

Mom: It is sad

Me: Let me bath Sedi Ma

Mom: I'll wash the dishes

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

03

MUSA

It was around 02:00am and we were hardly getting any sleep because of Pakiso. He has a tendency of bringing his friends over to his room, Smoke, And make noise. If they did a good score, They'll be drinking too..

Some of his friends use his space to sleep with girls. We don't have a padlock to the gate, He long ruined it.. Not to mention the gate itself....

I got up and out of my bedroom, Fixed my gown and went to the back. A few were standing by his door outside smoking weed.



The door was half opened, I got in. Some guy was high and passed out on the bed.

It was approximately 5 guys in total including the two who were smoking outside. Then two girls inside drinking black label..

Me: Pakiso aii.. Aii.. Aii since ngo 22:00.. Since ngo 22:00?

One of the girls made a comment by saying she told them to play the music low, They had a speaker box..

Pakiso followed me out..

Pakiso: Kanti yini?? Endlini ning'xoshile,  
Ngaphandle futhi? Unenkinga wena (What's  
wrong? Inside the house I'm not allowed, Even  
outside you complain? What's your issue)

Me: Maybe if you can actually do something  
with your life, You can get your own place and  
then uyenze khona le mess

Pakiso: Wena uhamba nini kanti? Ushada nini?  
Ntanga zakho zise makwabo (When are you  
leaving? Your peers are married and living in  
their own houses)

Me: Awuhloniphi no Mama ke? Njalo mele  
sikhale ngawe? Hai voetsek!! (You don't even  
respect Mom?)

Pakiso: Aw' ngiyeye your muskont!! Njalo wuwe pepeza straight, Hayi tsek nawe!!

There's no winning with him, I got inside the house and locked..

Mom: Myeke Musa, You know there's no winning with him

Me: It's wrong Ma!! This is not his house, People live peacefully in their own homes except for us here! Njalo wu Pakiso!! Aghaaa maan!!

Mom: Yeka Musa some other things are not worth your energy

Me: Pakiso is tiring Ma!!

I was yelling by the passage, Mom's bedroom door closed.. I heard Sedi crying in my bedroom..

Me: Ngi ngrand ngaye Pakiso!! Grand!!

I went to my bedroom, closed and locked the door..

Me: He's the biggest curse in my life!! Njalo sikuhlukunyezwa wuye (All the time he's the one abusing me). At least if it was a stranger, All he knows is when I'm getting married thinking he's going to represent me and pocket from my lobola money!

KENZO (KEN)

🎵 Ubethi uzoza ezongibona

Ehlale nami ubusuku bonke

Sishaye izinto zakhona

Si-enjoye nepillow talk 🎵

I was in my office with Ace. Ace is my best friend and gets the job done, When it comes to taking out someone. He gets hired a lot, Even by well financial stable people...

I was busy pacing up and down, Kurai was still around. Was keeping an eye on her via the surveillance camera monitor..

Ace: So?

I rubbed my hands together looking at the monitor. Barbie had joined them now..

Barbie and Kurai are friends, That's how I met Barbie..

Me: We can't.. Barbie is there, She's probably told Kurai that I am not happy ngale bhari

Ace: Flat Ntwana!! Yak'saba Barbie, Ngeke aringe (Barbie is scared of you, She'll never tell Kurai)

Me: You don't know girls.. We have to put it on hold for now

Ace: Themba mina, Ngimceda manje mabaphuma (Trust me, I can take care of him when they leave)

Me: And that won't be suspicious?

Ace: Flat!! (No)

Me: Thank goodness I have a brain of my own

Ace: Entlek tell me, Why umsaba kanje Kurai? (Why are you scared or Kurai)

Me: I'm not.. She's been through a lot as a kid, I couldn't protect her. I don't want her depressed again

Ace: Then uMbali why are you with her?

Me: You won't understand

Ace: Shame.. I have other commitments.  
Ngizok'bona jampas

Me: Sharp

He gave me a fist bump then left..

My phone vibrated, It was my Dad..

Dad and I still keep in contact, Kurai wants nothing to do with him. According to her, Dad was not there to protect her from our step father. She often says that Dad should've tried



harder to fight for us and took us. I am not defending him but Mom was with a dangerous man..

Dad: How's it going?

He's retired now..

Me: It's going good, Just checking a few things at the main Pub

Dad: Kurai?

I looked at the camera..

Me: She's fine, She's good.. I gotta bounce Dad it's late.. Heading home. I'll call you tomorrow

Dad: Alright send my love to Kurai

Me: Sure thang

I hung up and texted Barbie that we should leave....

MUSA

I kept on tossing and turning, Worse my room faces his.. The noise was unbearable.

I laid on my back facing the ceiling, In total darkness..

I had tears in my eyes, All I want is money to rent a room then be able to support my mom from far away. I can't take it anymore here in this house, Pakiso is slowly causing me depression..

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

04

YOLANDA (BARBIE)

Kurai and I spent the night away from home. I was just getting in and it was around 6am. I came back with Bolt, Left Kurai at the boyfriend's place. I had missed calls from Ken, Got his message that we should leave at the

Pub, Already I was drunk and we weren't in the pub anymore..

I feel bad sometimes because Kurai and I are best friends, I introduced her to my life before dating her Brother. I only left with them to make sure she's safe, Well I know she would. Jazzini is harmless, But just wanted to make thoroughly sure...

When I started dating Ken, I stopped my other hookups. Describing the Person that he is will be like climbing a steep slope. Ken is smart and also very dangerous. Each time when I make him mad, I pray that one day he doesn't turn on me and kill me..

He was sitting on the couch eating a bowl of cereal and watching the news. I stood by the

doorway that led to the lounge..

Me: Good morning

I even had the mother of Hangovers, Holding my heels and my bag. I was trembling, Scared of his reaction..

He got up from the couch and made his way to me with a serious look on his face, Just keeping his sharp look on me..

With my heart beating fast and legs frozen, He came closer and stretched his hand. I dropped my heels and bag to the floor and held both his hands shaking..

Ken: And then?

Me: I can explain about yesterday and what happened, Why I didn't come home

Ken: I know.. I'm just wondering why you holding my hands

I looked at him..

Ken: What? You think I'm going to hit you? If I wanted too I would've started long time ago..  
Ng'dedele Yolanda (let go of me)

I still held them..

Ken: You going to make me very mad, Because

hitting you was the last thing on my mind but now.. I might just hit you if you don't fucken let go of my hands

I let go of his hands. He clicked his tongue and picked up my bag. He unzipped and took out my phone. He checked..

Ken: It's working

He turned and through it against the wall. My heart skipped a bit. He walked over to it and stumped on it with his shoe..

Ken: At least now I'll know your phone is broken and you can't take my calls nor see my messages

That was an iPhone 13 pro max that he had bought for me..

He went and sat down, Continuing eating his breakfast..

MUSA

Usually after a fight between Pakiso and I, The following day we won't speak to each other. I was sweeping around the yard, On the phone with my Aunt..

Aunt: I understand Sisi, Pakiso uyahlupha (He's problematic)

Me: I'm just tired Aunty, Deep down I don't



wanna live here anymore. I'm always angry and depressed, I'd understand if I had a boyfriend who was doing this to me. I'd leave him, But your own Brother. The pain is different

Aunt: Uxolo bhabha.. I don't think moving out is a good idea. You know how much your Mother loves you and Sedi. She will die without you guys, Plus thina we trust you. If my Sister can die tomorrow, We trust you to take care of the house. That is your home, I don't mind you leaving if you got a job somewhere away from home but don't let Pakiso be the reason you leave. Ngcono kuhambe yena (He should be the one leaving)

Me: It's tiring.. I'm tired

Aunt: I know.. Maybe you guys can come visit

us this side for a weekend or so

Me: I'll think about it

Aunt: Just pray and keep your calm my love, It's going to be okay I love you

Me: I love you too

KENZO (KEN)

We are very close with our Aunt, My father's sister. She's like a Mother to us..

I called her..

Aunt: Kenzo

Me: Aunty

Aunt: Unjani Nana? (How are you)

I sighed..

Me: I'm good, I hope I am

Aunt: Yini kodwa? You don't sound well

Me: It's Kurai

Aunt: Wenzeni manje? (What has she done)

Me: She's impossible, I don't know how to get through to her

Aunt: You want me to come?

Me: I was thinking maybe she should come stay with you for a while

Aunt: That she won't agree.. You know me, And you know Kurai. I'm scared

Me: I know Aunty and I'm so sorry to burden you with this

Aunt: No I'm not scared of her, I'm scared that I might catch a case with her

I laughed..

Aunt: I am preparing to go to work baby, We'll talk later

Me: Okay

Aunt: Bye

Me: Bye

I think Kurai living with my Aunt will be better. My Aunt when I heard her story. She beat all odds, When her friends were busy with different Men. She was busy studying, Failed a few times but made it..

MUSA

I went back to the back with my dusty feet. I saw Pakiso walking out of his bedroom, He was with our cousin. My Aunt's daughter.

My mom only has sisters, It was the 5 of them. 3 died, Now it's just mom and her older sister. Her big sister the one I called lives in the family house since my Father bought my mother this house. It's her daughter who was coming from Pakiso's bedroom. She's also another trouble, Her and Pakiso are trouble.. They smoke but Thuli smokes weed and iNtash..

Me: Thuli

Thuli: Hey Cuz

Me: Bengingazi ukhona? (I didn't know you were here)

Thuli: Yaa I passed by here last night

She followed Pakiso. I checked his room, There was no one else there..

I got into the house..

Me: Ma!! Ma!!

Ma: Singapha (We here)

I went to them..

Me: Thuli left Pakiso's room just now, I think she came in after my fight with Pakiso. No one else was there other than them

Ma: Hau

Me: Ma.. What if they sleeping together?

Ma: Wouldn't be surprised since they smoke these drugs

Me: Ma!!

Ma: Musa what do you want me to say? Yell at them? Will that stop them? Will that do anything?



Me: I'm calling uMamkhulu

Ma: Yaa call Grace, I'll talk to her maybe she'll talk some sense kubo. Mina I'm tired struu

.

To be continued

No edits

THE NARCISSIST

05

KENZO (KEN)

I went to check one of my bars in town. To make sure that they were prepared for today,

It'll be busy too.. In town I know everything is kosher, But in the hood I have to be there most of the time to make sure that everything is kosher. You know how the hood is..

I spotted one of my favorite customers. Menzi, I looked at the time. It was 10:00am

I walked up to Menzi..

Me: Eyy Menzi

Menzi: Hola poi

Me: Heineken ngo 10:00am, Koshaya 2 sowunjani Ntwana. Zkhiphani? (Heineken so early, By 14:00 you'll be dead drunk)

Menzi: Eish poi family issues. My little brother is into this nyoape things and what not so he's very problematic

Me: Eish hade mfwethu

Menzi: Pakiso is a problem yaa but minds his own business, The biggest problem is my little sister Joe.. Yerrrrrrrrr Musa yi shobolo joh. My mother is very sweet and quiet, My sister you'd swear she's Pakiso's Mom. A phone call or whatsapp message from Musa, You need to have something strong next to you. Unekani, She's stubborn and very loud

Me: Let me guess, She's the middle child?

Menzi: Yaa she is. One thing about her, She doesn't like wrong things and she will call you out. Ned she's loud, I always tell her. Maybe if you can talk to him like a normal person he will listen, I know why she's single. There's no guy who can tolerate that noise. Worse when she's angry, 2 weeks can pass without her talking to you. She will still cook etc, How the fuck you going to eat food from someone who doesn't talk to you

Me: Women.. I have two at home entlek ngi grand

Menzi: I have to drive home today and see what's going on

Me: Aight cool

MUSA

I was standing by the gate with my friend Gabi.  
We had our eyes glued by Spura's house..

Gabi: Bathi uSpura they found him this morning  
around the yard. He was cold, Naked, badly  
bruised and dead

Spura and Pakiso are friends..

Me: Where was Pakiso? Why didn't they beat  
him to death too and we found him dead  
around the yard

Gabi: Awukahle Ooe

Me: I don't understand. Spura had a job there by Ken's Pub, Not an impressive job but at least he had something. I'm sure whoever did this was someone that Spura stole from. I thought with the job, He was going to make something of himself

Gabi: He should've went to rehab or something

Me: Aii

YOLANDA (BARBIE)

Kurai walked in on me crying..

Kurai: Hau friend what's wrong?

I showed her the phone..

Kurai: You got robbed? What happened?

Me: No.. Your Brother broke it this morning

Kurai: Ken, Did he hit you?

Me: No.. Ken has never hit me. This is a nightmare, He knows my parents don't know that I stay here. You know how paranoid they get, If they call and get a hold of me they will freak out. I don't wanna cause my Mother stress

Kurai: I'll borrow you my old iPhone

Me: You know it's just going to piss him off

Kurai: So what are you going to do?

Me: I wanna leave him, But I'm scared. My life was jolly before him. I knew the guys I was messing with we had no strings attached type of thing. When I met your Brother I thought at least I found myself someone you know but Ken is a psychopath

Kurai: A narcissist

Me: What?

Kurai: He's not a psycho he's more of a



Narcissist

Me: Whatever that is, He is never wrong and sees nothing wrong that he does. According to him he's the most perfect person and everyone else is wrong

Kurai: You can dump him

Me: Like you can ever dump KK, No one would ever believe I'm being abused he looks perfect

Kurai: Forget about him, I'm going to borrow you my old iPhone. Fuck him

Me: You only going to put me in a mess

Kurai: So you'd rather have your problems report you missing?

Me: You can borrow me

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

06

Dedicated to: Gorata Rati Gagoope (TOP COMMENTOR ON INSERT 05)

MUSA

Menzi was here but his presence does nothing

much.. Pakiso was still out..

Menzi: I hear you mntaka Ma, But what can be done? Nothing.. It's his home too, Askies. Your feelings are validated

Me: Menzi don't say that just because you want the issue to be done and go back to your life

Menzi: How hard it is for you to ignore him?

Me: It's not but remember.. I have mom here and Lesedi. Pakiso his life is a turmoil, I don't mind him doing his things but when my security, The security of my child and Mom is compromised that's when I have a problem.. Inkinga ukuthi you guys are living your lives comfortably so.. You come here brush me off

with words the end of the day, I'm stuck with this person. He steals, Sometimes people who he has stole from come here and harass us, He borrows money from people then they come here demanding it. For our safety I'll have to talk to them, Negotiate.. Pay them back and we left with nothing to buy food

I picked up Lesedi as she was for me to pick her up...

Mom: That is true.. Musa has paid debts that ain't hers for Pakiso

Menzi seemed bored by the issue.. He yawned..

Menzi: Okay what do we do?

Me: I just need a job that's all so I can have enough to provide, At least let me get that and everything else it's okay. Let me get even one small thing that will make me happy, The rest it's okay we'll see. Just concentrate on Me, Mom, And Sedi. At least a job and the two people who make me happy

Menzi: I'll see what I can do, Talk to few people so we see but in the meantime I have R300. You guys will see what to do

Me: Menzi you haven't seen us for 6 months until today and all you give us is R300? 6 months?

Menzi: That's all I can afford for you guys. Okay Pakiso is useless, Wena you aren't. Why can't you find a job yourself and provide more than

the R300? You guys forget.. You not my responsibility. Plus my wife is doing psychology at Unisa her fees are expensive

Me: She's been doing that for 7 years now, I'm telling you this girl is just using you to get her shit together.. Let her graduate and work then you'll see her true colours. She will leave you

Menzi: Mara wena uyaloya straight (You a witch) If she leaves me then vele you would've bewitched us even not ngomuthi or consulting it's going to be with your heart. You quick to see everyone's flaws, Making us seem like we are stupid and wena you Ms perfect! Worse your Mother loves you more and I'm thinking it's because vele your father bought us this home since ours were useless and we grew up here, Mama naye she's a hypocrite. Vele why did you

call me here?

Me: We family aren't we? I called you as my big brother with a problem. This situation of you bringing up that it's my father's house etc did I ever say otherwise to you? We all grew up here.. This is our home, I just want u-

Menzi: Our home? You speaking almost as if like you care. When shit goes down, You even the first one to call Aunty Grace. I'm sure with Pakiso you've already called her. Paint us bad so you can seem like Ms perfect!! Always.. I Ntandokazi and you wonder why I don't come? Leaving this house and you guys was the best decision ever.. Ohh I forget, Konje it's your father's house Ms perfect

Mom: Menzi!!.. Musa!! Yekani maan, Can you

everyone search themselves from deep within. You guys have individual problems and no one will highlight, You'll change yourself when you want too as an individual, But when if one of you suddenly your problem affects all of us. We have to come together and sort it out

Menzi: Ma if you wanna defend intandokazi yakho just do so, Don't spin things around

Me: I'm so glad my friend uGabi asked us to go out to the pub, At least there I'll get fresh air and actually be happy out of this environment

I gave Lesedi to my Mother..

Me: Thank you Menzi for coming and actually doing nothing!!.. Let me go bath and go



Menzi: See what I'm talking about? You only using Mom to babysit for you, So you can go out and get drunk!! What kind of a Mother are you? Wena you only using Mom and naye she keeps quiet because of the R400+ you get from Sassa to buy her food!! Let's talk about your flaws too Ms perfect!! Since you wanna talk about Pakiso

Ma: Menzi stop

YOLANDA (BARBIE)

I was at the therapists office...

Therapist: I am so sorry you came and he's not here, And I can't talk about him in absentia.

## Patient confidentiality

Me: I understand but.. Doc please, I need to know what's wrong with him. I want to leave him, Should I do and he kills me it'll be in your conscience. Saturdays he knows we come for therapy, I've never missed a our appointments but he has.. From a Professional point of view please.. I'm begging you

She sighed..

Me: If you had a Daughter and she was dating a Kenzo would you be okay?

Therapist: Okay, Only because your life is in danger as you say

Me: Thank you, I just wanna know what I'm dealing with before I leave

Therapist: Kenzo Khaba when it comes to relationships. He's only looking for one thing and one thing only. A strong woman that reminds him of what his Mother put him through. He looks for a strong woman that he can break. Him breaking the woman is his revenge to his mother, It's how he revenges her through his girlfriends. You will come strong, He will break you and when he's done. He won't see your value anymore because you can't satisfy his maternal revenge. To him, That's how he gains his power, That's how he feels he has gotten his revenge. Unfortunately he's doing it to the wrong people

I closed my eyes for a while trying to trap tears..

Me: What do I do then? What do I do to know I'm safe when I leave him? I wanna leave him

Therapist: Honestly speaking he is a rare case, 6 years of therapy couldn't even break him

I looked at her for a few seconds..

Therapist: What?

Me: You recording this aren't you? You recording this so you can show him. You on his payroll

I got up..

Therapist: What are you talking about? I am on your side

Me: No you not!! How could I be such a fool

Therapist: Yolanda calm down, You overreacting. You going through wh-

Me: How could I be stupid!! You told me about him so easy.. Therapists just like as Doctors. You can't reveal a patient's confidentiality. You binded by the work ethics

I pointed at her with my bag on my wrist..

Me: You played me!! You on his payroll

KENZO (KEN)

She walked out of the Therapist's office and banged the door behind her.. The therapist walked closer to the camera..

Therapist: I'm sorry.. I tried, Believe me I tried

I closed my laptop and exhaled..

I closed my eyes and rubbed my hands together..

Me: Barbie.. Barbie.. This just turned me on, If only you weren't planning on leaving me

.

To be continued

# THE NARCISSIST

07

MUSA

Gabi and I went to the Pub. I needed a breather, Just some time away from my toxic home environment. Even if it's a few hours.. Menzi did upset me too here and there. The most painful thing about everything he said, Was the fact that I act how I act because the house is my father's house. I have never and I mean never made him and Pakiso feel some type of way about that. I always considered home, Our home. They my brothers doesn't matter how home came about...

Gabi: Eish Ooe your situation is difficult maan

She was the one who bought us a 6 pack of savanna.. She is not working but have a boyfriend who gives her money every now and then. She comes from a good home, Not rich but good....

Me: It gets too much sometimes I just wanna shut down

Gabi: Continue looking for a job and don't mind them those two

Me: Yes.. True

KENZO



I was on the phone with Kurai..

Kurai: She's taken her things and went home,  
What did you do?

Me: I've done nothing

Kurai: So why is she so upset and scared?

Me: I don't know Kurai, Honestly. I don't know  
what's happening with Barbie, Maybe she's mad  
because I didn't show up for therapy

Kurai: It can't be that

Me: Did you ask her?

Kurai: No

Me: Ask her then, Look I have to go. I'm at work

I hung up and checked the main floor through the monitor. By the bar, I noticed two girls who didn't look familiar drinking savanna. I really can't hear what they say because of the music..

I zoomed in, The other one looked a bit upset judging from her facial expression..

Lebo: Boss

Me: Yeah?

Lebo: The stock has just arrived

Me: Sharp ntwana

He walked away..

Me: Wait a minute Lebo.. Come here

He came..

Me: Do me a favour, Go out there. Act drunk and harass that girl, See that one in a green top by the bar?

Lebo: Yes Sir

Me: Please.. Don't be too much though, Just wanna see her reaction that's all

Lebo: Yes Sir

MUSA

The Bartender kept our savanna in the fridge,  
Kept on giving us one by one..

We were on our second bottles now..

As we were just chilling and having a good time,  
I felt a hand on my thigh..

I checked, It was some guy..

Him: Sweetie

Me: Wtf?

I yanked his hand off my thigh..

Him: Relax maan, I've been watching you from afar. You beautiful, Wanna buy you and your friend another round

Me: We fine thank you

Him: Yini manje? Don't play hard to get, I really wanna buy you and your friend another round and you show me a good time

He touched my breast.. I picked up my glass and poured the savanna on his face..

Me: Wtf is wrong with you? He touched my breast.. He touched my breast

Gabi: Haibo Bhuti!! Kanti what's wrong?

He wiped his face with his shirt, I saw Kenzo walking to us..

Kenzo: And then?

Me: This man is harassing me, I'm here to have a good time with my friend and I'm being harassed for a second round!

Kenzo: Ekse yini manje? (What's wrong)

Guy: Hade bhoza mina beng-

Kenzo: Vaya Jo.. Voetsek Vaya (leave)

Guy: Fede

He left..

Gabi: Are you okay?

Kenzo: I'm truly sorry a-

Me: You sorry? Guys harass us and you sorry?

Where is security to make sure we safe? After here I'm blasting you and your pub on Facebook

Kenzo: There's absolutely no need for that, I will greatly take care of it and please have some cocktails on the house

Me: What? You gonna have them spiked? Seems like that's what your pub is about. Sexual harassment

Kenzo: Hlisa umoya (Calm down)

Gabi: I'm sorry.. My friend is already having a bad day

Kenzo: I understand.. And I'm truly sorry...?



Me: Musa..

Kenzo: Wait are you Menzi's sister?

Me: Yes

Kenzo: I know him.. He drinks at my bar in town

Me: I don't care

Kenzo: Alright then, Let me leave you two. I'm truly sorry about what happened. I'll keep on checking up on you

He walked away.. I sat down and clicked my

tongue..

Gabi: I think we should go

Me: Why?

Gabi: Might come of weird but.. I think Kenzo had an erection. Literally saw the bulge in his jeans

Me: That's nonsense Gabi, We not wearing anything that's sexually attractive

Gabi: Or maybe he has a big dick

Me: Maybe

I sat down..

Bartender: Should I give you the menu for cocktails?

Me: Yes please

Gabi: Let's drink the night away, And forget about problems for a while

KENZO

I quickly rushed to my office. I got in and locked. I was turned on by her reaction. Finding out that she is Menzi's sister, Judging from her character. She's indeed strong, Stubborn and

feisty..

Exactly how I like my girls..

I went and sat down. Unbuttoned my jeans and unzipped my jeans to let my dick breath. Actually jerking off her, I was very turned on. My dick was rock hard.. I wished at moment to place her on the counter and fuck that attitude out of her, Fuck her hard until hear her last screaming. Screaming my name and begging me to stop but not really wanting me to stop at the same time..

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

08

DEDICATED TO: KHANYISILE MHLALASA

MUSA

Last night was wild. The cocktails took us, We got so drunk that Kenzo literally drove us home. He still felt bad about what had happened in the Pub. To avoid waking up my Mother in the early hours of the morning, I slept by Gabi's place..

I had to leave early though, Mom goes to church at 11:00am..

Gabi's sister was at the kitchen making herself something to eat.. I don't usually go out,

Following yesterday. I last went out 3 weeks ago. I'm not talking about drinking, Talking about going out..

Sometimes we drink indoors with Gabi..

Evelyn: Yaaa Sdakwa!!

Me: Not so loud

I sat down..

Evelyn: If I didn't have to go to work today,  
Would've joined you guys

Me: One thing I hate about drinking, Is the hangover after

Evelyn: That's worse

Me: Tell me about it

Evelyn: Hey how is job searching?

Me: Not good

Evelyn: Are you open to any job?

Me: Yaa

Evelyn: The fuel station I work at, they need 2 temps. Not gonna be a lot of money though. You'll be working 10 hours or so a month. Fixed

income R2500, You pull extra can go to R3000

Evelyn works at Debonairs. The fuel station has Pnp and Debonairs....

Me: It's a good start

Evelyn: You can just go drop off your CV there

Me: Wow thank you so much Evelyn

Evelyn: You welcome

YOLANDA (BARBIE)

I was coming back from my morning run, When



I got home I heard two voices in the lounge. My Mom and a familiar voice..

I got scared, It can't be. If yes, Where the hell did he park? How did he know my home? I've never taken him to my house.

Indeed it was him, Having breakfast with my Mother..

Mom: Ohw honey your boyfriend showed up

I looked at Ken..

Mom: You never told us about this fine young and delightful man

Me: Uhm.. What are you doing here?

Mom: Yoli.. That's rude! Xolisa (apologize)

Ken: It's okay Mrs Ntsele, I understand her frustrations. I should've been a better boyfriend

Mom: Yoli do you know how hard it is to find a man who works hard? Then you have one and dump him for working too much and long hours?

I was speechless...

Mom: Why didn't you tell us you were struggling financial sweetie?

Me: What did Ken tell you?

Mom: That you struggling. Lost your job and apartment, He took you in after you were living from Man to Man. Yoli we never kicked you out of this house you know that right?

Me: I know

Mom: I am so disappointed and embarrassed

Ken: Don't be.. Life for a young woman is difficult. She just have to thank my sister, Kurai brought her to me

Mom: Would you like some more muffins?

Ken: No I'm good.. Thank you so much. I have

to go, Just wanted to make sure she's home safe. Especially after the incident on Friday. She got robbed and attacked, Phone broken. Mrs N, Yoli has been greatly depressed following her financial struggles, Please don't be too much on her

Mom: You are so sweet

Ken: I try

He wiped his lips with the napkin and got up..

Ken: I enjoyed the breakfast, Thank you

My mom hugged him..

Mom: You welcome

Ken gave me a death stare whilst hugging my Mom..

Mom: Yoli.. See him out. Such a respectful young man, Your Mom must be proud

Ken: I'm sure she is, She passed on a few years ago

That was a lie, His mom. He got her locked up..

MUSA

As I was walking to the door, I heard some commotion in Pakiso's room..

Thuli: Hai maan kanti yini? I gave you umdidi moss a few minutes ago you want more? (We had sex a few minutes ago. You want more)

Pakiso's voice was faint, Couldn't hear his responses well..

Thuli: Ngcono ngidunuse futhi moss (Let me bend over again)

I knocked for my mom..

Me: Ma.. It's me

Thuli opened the door and walked out of the room, Shocked to see me..

Thuli: Cuz

Me: Cuz

Thuli: Was just going to the toilet

I watched her go to the toilet whilst shaking my head. This was nauseating, Made my stomach turn..

Mom opened. I didn't tell her anything..

Mom: I was worried you'll come back late and I'll be late for church

Me: I wouldn't

She closed the door and locked..

Me: I'm sorry about yesterday, What happened between Menzi and I. All that shouting in front of you was disrespectful

Mom: Understandable, We can forget about it. Take the R300, Go buy vegetables, Meat and rice then cook

Me: May I please borrow R50. I need to drop off my CV tomorrow at pnp in town, At the fuel station

Mom: No problem.. Don't forget to pray, I'll also



tell the Pastor so he can pray for you

Me: Thank you Ma

Mom: know that I'm very proud of you, I don't love you more than your brothers I just favour you because you the only child who actually cares

We looked at each other and laughed..

Mom: Okay maybe I do, Just a little more than them but don't tell them

Me: Your secret is safe with me

YOLANDA (BARBIE)

We walked to his car, He was parked by the corner. So he said.. We walked in total silence, My knees were weak. I was scared.

We got to his car, He rubbed his hands together and looked at me..

Ken: So what happened?

Me: I just felt like visiting home. Would've told you but you broke my phone

He unlocked his car, Took out a plastic and flowers..

Ken: A new phone, Same one

Me: Thank you

Ken: I want you home by tomorrow morning

Me: I can't I n-

Ken: I'm going to drop a statement and pick it up very quickly. I'm going to fetch you tomorrow morning, I am not asking you. I am telling you

Me: My Parents won't allow, Not when you've told my Mom th-

Ken: You smart, You'll figure it out when it comes to telling them. All I know is that tomorrow is my day off and I am fetching you

I kept quiet..

He walked closer and I moved back..

Ken: Eyy iyang'cika lento yakho of thinking that I'm always going to hit you

Me: Can we make a deal? I move back home and visit you

Ken: Statement sobufebe nje kphela leso  
(That's a statement to whore around)

Me: You can get any girl you want, You are Kenzo Khaba.. Why won't you let me go?

He glanced down at me..

Ken: Don't be an enjoyable cunt in bed, Maybe just maybe I'll get tired of you

He came and kissed me on my forehead..

Ken: I'll fetch you tomorrow

He got to his car..

Ken: Ohw and.. If I come and you not around. You going to have 99 problems and all of them are going to be me

Me: Are you threatening me?

Ken: You know I don't threaten, I make statements that fortunately turn out to be true

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

09

MUSA

I was cooking whilst Sedi was watching TV. I kept on drinking water in between, The hangover wasn't going away. Going to our shopping complex to buy vegetables, Meat and rice. I felt like I was going to fall over standing in the queue whilst having Sedi on my back..

I heard a knock at the door, It's probably Gabi. I looked at the time, It was 13:00 now.

I went to open, Kenzo was standing at my doorstep concentrating on his phone..

Me: Kenzo?

He put his phone away..

Me: What are you doing here? How did you find my house?

Ken: I asked around.. May I?

Me: May you what?? You can't just show up at my house

Ken: I just wanted to make sure that you okay, Following the incident last night. Is your friend also okay?

Me: We are fi-.. Kenzo you can't just show up at my house

Ken: I apologise, I really wanted to make sure you safe

Pakiso walked out of his room..

Pakiso: Ta Kenzo



Kenzo: Ola poi

Pakiso: Ulahlekile na? (Are you lost)

Kenzo: Nex poi, Zobona suster (I'm here to see your sister)

This was embarrassing, Especially with Pakiso smelling horribly..

Pakiso: Yeeeh? Zoyakhipha moss Ta Kenzo

Me: We not dating.. He just..

Ken: I heard about your friend poi, Hade

Pakiso: Yaa yazini Spura it was unexpected

Ken: His job is open at the pub, If you wanna make yourself some few cents

Pakiso: Struu? Ahh nakanjani bhoza

Ken: Tomorrow morning? 7am?

Pakiso: Ngizobe ngi daar bhoza, I'll wash up..  
Ngeke uzisole (You won't regret it)

Pakiso was excited, Was my first time seeing him excited about something. He got into his bedroom..

Ken looked at me..

Ken: I'm glad you home safe, See you around  
Mommy

He then walked off, Still leaving a trail of his  
cologne..

I closed the door..

Me: What the fuck just happened??

YOLANDA (BARBIE)

I was at the police station..

Officer: Has he hit you before?

Me: No

Officer: Has he ever threatened to hit you?

Me: No

Officer: I don't understand

Me: I wanna know how I can apply for a restraining order against my ex. He showed up at my house this morning unannounced, I know he is stalking me. Probably tapped my phone too. He's a delusional Narcassist and very dangerous

Officer: Whoaa those are some big words. Look

you can't be just granted a restraining order,  
You need to prove without any reasonable  
doubt that your life is indeed in danger. At least  
texts, Something

Me: Officer he's smart and dangerous. How  
would you feel if you hear tomorrow I'm dead all  
because you didn't wanna help me?

Officer: Maybe you taking things too far,  
Overreacting. I know you slay queens over  
exaggerate when a rich man dumps you now  
you seeking revenge in other ways

Me: He did not dump me, I dumped him first

Officer: Until you can prove that your life is in  
danger then you won't be granted one, Just a

word of advice

Me: Useless justice system

Officer: Sisi weeh, You guys are quick to call us useless. Let's say you are granted one, Tomorrow you'll revoke it talking about you fixed things.. I know you girls, Especially you slay queens

Me: I am not a slay queen!

Officer: Next please!!

MUSA

Mom came back from church.. I told her what

happened..

Mom: Kenzo is Tshidi's Nephew

Me: Tshidi your long time friend?

Mom: Yes.. He's done pretty well for himself that young man

Me: He even offered Pakiso a job

Mom: That's nice of him, He likes you

Me: No he just doesn't want me to blast him on social media. Showing up at my house, Giving Pakiso a job. Just trying to soften me up

Mom: Weeeh Musa

Me: I know guys like Kenzo. Changing girls,  
Having sex. Playing girls next thing he's positive

Mom: Aibo just because he's successful he is  
just like any other successful man?

Me: I don't want him.. I'm too broke and have a  
lot of issues, A boyfriend is just going to be  
another stress added. I'm not ready

Mom: Hmmm.. I'm really proud of you but don't  
close your heart completely just because of  
Sedi's father. Heal, Find yourself, Be  
independent. When you get into a relationship  
and you independent, It'll be easier to walk away



when things aren't nice because you be independent. You won't be staying for money

Me: Very true

Mom: Let me nap a little.. You'll wake me up when you done

Me: Okay Ma

KENZO

I stopped by at Spura's House.. To pay my respects..

Me: He had problems but he respected his job. When I heard about the ordeal, I wasn't okay.

I'm truly sorry for your loss

His Mother and Aunty were sitting on the mattress..

Me: If there's anything I can do

Aunty: Siyabonga Kenzo, Thank you for coming

Me: I have R5000 with me to help out here and there, If khona okuzoshoda please don't hesitate to send someone to the pub

I put the envelope with money on the white plate..

Aunty: May God bless you, Not all bosses would

do this

Me: He was like family to me, A little brother. I feel like a failure

Aunty: Kuzolunga

Me: Have you guys thought of uhm.. Performing a ritual on his body so he can take revenge?

Aunty: Chaa.. Kona how he died was painful but my nephew. He was trouble some, He brought us nothing but trouble. Stealing, Starting trouble between his Mom and the neighbours. My sister having to pay his debts. We are just at peace that he's at peace, He won't be troublesome anymore

Me: I understand

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

11

MUSA

29 years old, And years of Job hunting without any success. Today I got a job. I know it's not much, But it's a start. Faith renewed and a sign to not give up, Things do get better eventually..

I got home at around 17:00. My Mother was so happy to hear that I got the job..

Since she helps me a lot with Lesedi, I always promised her that I will give her Lesedi's sassa card so she will also have some money for things that she need...

First thing she did was to pray, We prayed and thanked God. Prayer of gratitude for once than a prayer of complaining and crying...

It was amazing..

Me: Tomorrow morning I have to wake up early, Start at the bank to get a letter so I can submit at work

Mom: I am so happy

Me: Yaa but my money for training will be included month end on my pay. I need money for transportation

Mom: With our living situation, Neighbours won't budge

Me: I'll go and try Gabi

Mom: Okay in the meantime I'll also think of something

YOLANDA (BARBIE)

I was exhausted and in pain, I just needed to get rest and a salt bath..

I walked into the kitchen, Surprised to see Ken dressed up. All refreshed. I thought after him showering, He was going to join me in bed. I guess that's not the case..

I hugged him from the back, I was wearing his tshirt..

Me: I thought we were going to sleep it off

Ken: I can't, I have to stop by at the pub to attend to a few things

Me: Ohw

Ken: Yeah

Me: Ken, I.. I think we should talk. The reason why I broke it off with you is because. We have problems, And I was just tired of the person that you are. You are emotionally and mentally abusive. Got to a point where I was scared of being with you. If you can go back to therapy, Actually commit to it this time around. I am willing to stay

He turned around and looked at me..

Ken: You don't wanna break up anymore?

Me: Yes.. I want us to fix it

He removed my hands from him..



Ken: I think we should break up

Me: Huh?

Ken: I am interested in someone else now, I think you right. We should break up

I laughed...

Me: You joking right?

Ken: No.. You can dress up I'll drop you off at home, Also make sure you have taken everything of yours. I find something.. It's going to end up in the trash bin

I slapped him..

Me: You bastard!!.. So what? You just wanted to chow me? That's all?

Ken: For someone who gets scared of me that I'll hit you, You doing well on the violence

Me: You are the most selfish and evil m-

Ken: Enough!! A few days ago you didn't want me anymore, You moved back home. I fetched you, You didn't want!. You don't want me, You've said it and shown it. I'm giving you what you want and this is your reaction? Don't bore me

The door opened, Kurai walked in..

Kurai: I can see you guys breathing heavily,  
What's going on?

Ken: We breaking up.. For real this time

Kurai: What? Why?

Me: Because your Brother is a sick psycho!! He  
used me

Ken: Askies? What financial benefit did you  
bring into our relationship? Nothing! Not even a  
cent.. How the fuck did I use you?

Kurai: Maybe it's for the best, You guys are toxic

Me: Ohhh shut up!! Shut up!. Being toxic is the

last statement that should come out of your mouth, When you are an overly dramatic spoiled brat that thinks the world owes her something!

Kurai: What is wrong with you?

Me: I said shut up!! Do you know how long I had to put up with your ass? Yes you went through something traumatic as a child but grow up!! You not the first and definitely not the last!!

Me: Hey!!! You don't talk to my sister like that

Kurai: Woow!!

Kurai walked to her room..

Me: Kurai..

Kurai: Leave my Brother's house.. Get out of our house!!

Ken looked at me with a conniving smile...

Ken: Checkmate

He walked away. I hit the counter....

Me: Fuck!!!!

MUSA

I went to borrow money from Gabi she was flat

broke..

Me: Yooh I don't know what I'm going to do, I can't lose my job because of transportation money

Gabi: Evelyn naye she's broke

Me: I guess this is what I get for having only one friend

(Silence)

Gabi: Hey you know what.. Kenzo borrows people money

Me: No

Gabi: So long you pay him when you get paid,  
You'll be fine

Me: Kenzo are not people you borrow money  
from, He's dangerous

Gabi: R500.. When I hustle from my boyfriend  
we will pay him back even before the due date

Me: I don't know

Gabi: What choice do you have?

I looked at her..

Me: Fine.. We can go but I hate this

KENZO

Barbie opted for an Uber. Honestly speaking I hated their friendship. Barbie introduced Kurai to this slay queen influencer life..

I knocked and walked in. She was sitting on her bed whilst typing on her phone..

Me: Let me guess.. You trashing her?

Kurai: No

Me: Well then I can just go on whatsapp, Sure I won't find any whatsapp posts of you upset?



Kurai: I can't believe she said that. I trusted her with my pain as a friend

Me: Forget about Barbie, We gain some friends and lose some friends. It happens, It's life

Kurai: I guess so

Me: I love you.. You know that right?

Kurai: I know

Me: And that's all that matters

Kurai: I love you too

Me: I don't know.. As a pick me up better mood.  
How about a trip down to cape town this  
coming weekend, You and two friends?

Kurai: You don't have too

Me: Alright then, Guess I'll go deposit my  
second car

Kurai: I never said No.. Just said you don't have  
too

Me: Come here

She came to me, I hugged her tight..

Me: I'm going to the pub, Wanna come and chill?

Kurai: No I'll be fine, I need to upload a few videos on tik tok

Me: Okay.. I'll see you later

I kissed her on the forehead..

MUSA

It wasn't busy at the Pub. I saw Pakiso picking up bottles..

Me: Pakza

Pakiso: Eyy.. What are you guys doing here?

Gabi: We looking for Ken, Is he in?

Pakiso: Nope

Me: Okay thank you, Let's go

Pakiso: He is coming though heard at the kitchen

Gabi: Wait he's coming

Me: We'll come back

Gabi: What if he pops in and go? Let's wait

Pakiso: Yaa wait.. I have R50 you guys can get two savannas whilst waiting inside

Gabi: You see.. Loosen up

We went in..

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

10

YOLANDA (BARBIE)

He couldn't fetch me the next day, But sent an

Uber. My heart was on my knees, I was terrified..

The Uber dropped me off, I buzzed and he opened the gate. No sign of his dogs, I went straight to the house. Knocked once and walked in..

He was in the kitchen preparing breakfast..

Me: Good morning

Ken: Good morning my Angel

I didn't have my luggage bag, Just my hand bag..

Ken: Where are your clothes?

Me: Didn't bring them

Ken: What is this?

Me: Ken I don't want you anymore, I want to break up with you

Ken: If that's how you feel then why did you come?

Me: To save my life

He nodded, Okay we can talk about this. About the break up, But I want us to talk about it whilst I'm inside of you...

Me: Ken

He turned off the stove...

Then walked up to me, I didn't step back this time around..

He wrapped his arm around my waist, I could see my heart beating through my shirt..

He kissed me on my forehead, Then my nose bridge and finally my mouth..

Toxic yes he is, But he gives out good sex...

He broke the kiss, And kissed me on my cheek. Then whispered in my ear..



Ken: Let's talk

MUSA

A stroke of luck happened this morning, The Pnp job. I was hired on the spot. They took my CV, And then asked me a few questions.. I will be working Thursday-Sat. Sometimes Sundays.

I couldn't believe it, I was trembling. It was unexpected and came at the right time..

The working hours are unstable, Not exactly 10 hours straight. 7am-6pm from Thursday to Friday, Saturday 9am-3pm. Same as Sundays too.. Salary starting from

R2000/R2500 a month..

Mananger: You can start your training now so Thursday you'll have knowledge, You'll be paid for the hours you going to avail yourself on with regards to training

Me: I understand

Manager: Thandeka will show you how we work

This was amazing...

YOLANDA (BARBIE)

Was a bit hard talking about it whilst he was deep inside of me.. Each time I tried to talk, He'll

pump more harder. We were in bed, He was behind me. My leg slightly lifted, He was stimulating my clitoris as we continued having sex. I could feel his warm breath hitting behind my neck, He'll move his lips and place them on my ear. Occasionally asking why I'm dumping him.. His voice turns you on more when he whispers..

Ken: Talk to me, Why is this our last moment?

Me: Ken...

He continued pumping me harder..

Me: Ken!!!!!!!!!!!!

Ken: I'm listening baby

It felt good, You know the feeling of a dick inside of you and his fingers rubbing your clitoris.. I was on the 7th cloud of happiness

Ken: Talk to me

Me: I can't talk right now

Ken: Try.. If you don't I'm stopping

Me: Please don't stop

Ken: You seriously are leaving me?

Me: Hmmmmm

Ken: Are you?

Me: Not now

Ken: Not now

Me: Not now

MUSA

It wasn't so bad, learning the system. I'll be restocking the shelves too..

Since I hadn't started, Was working the till under

strict supervision from Thandeka.

Thandeka seems nice..

I hope we'll be working well together..

Thandeka: You just need to be quick on your feet that's all, People don't wanna wait in line forever. Especially when the buses stop by to refill and refreshments..

Me: Noted

Thandeka: You'll see on the weekend

YOLANDA (BARBIE)

I glanced down at his dick going in and out of me. He held a vibrator against my clit.

I was sitting on the dressing table, He was in between my legs. I was close to squirting, I pushed him off a little and blasted. A little of it went on his pelvic area

He came back again and got inside of me, He handed me the vibrator and I pressed it there..

He placed his hand on my throat, Didn't close my windpipe just pressed on the sides. He really went for it that I dug my nails on his hands..

Ken: I want to fuck you so hard, That even after

you leave you will remember this

Me: I placed my hand on him to push him off a little

Ken: If you push me off again I'm going to stop,  
And I'll stop halfway when you about to come,  
Clear?

Me: Clear

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST



MUSA

We waited 40min for him. We kept on drinking our savanna slowly, Although Gabi went for hers..

Gabi: Can't believe Pakza bought us savanna

Me: He will be awaiting a payment soon. Since I'm a girl and he really wants a share of my lobola money. Now that I'm working if he keeps this job he will be misusing his money and be bothering me with money

Gabi: Possible

I yawned..

Me: We probably should go

Gabi: Yaa I get you, We've waited long enough

Just as we were preparing to leave.. He walked in. Eyes glued on his phone, Whilst holding his car keys..

Gabi: Yena he's very good looking isn't he? And clean too

Me: And I doubt single. Plus guys like him, he probably have a church of girlfriends

Gabi: Let's go

We walked up to him..

Gabi: Ken

He looked at us..

Gabi: Hi

Ken: Ladies

Gabi: I hope you still remember us

Ken: How can I forget? Just glad to see that you guys are safe

Gabi: We would like to talk to you about

something

Ken: Okay

He rested his elbow on the bar counter...

Gabi: I.. If I remember correctly, You loan people money

Ken: Are you asking me or telling me?

Gabi: Actually asking

Ken: Yes I do

Gabi: My.. My friend Musa would like to loan

R500 from you

He looked at me..

Gabi: She will pay month end

Ken: Does Musa have a mouth?

Musa poked me..

Me: May I loan R500 from you? I'll pay back month end or before I would also like to know the interest

Ken: 2 weeks to month end, It'll be R1000 return

Me: Yooh!

Gabi: That's a bit of a steep

Ken: If that'll be all ladies, Excuse me

He walked away..

Me: We'll take it.. I mean I'll take it

He stopped and looked at me..

Ken: I'm going to need your phone as collateral

Me: I can't.. My phone is.. I can't do it

Gabi: Please we'll pay you back every cent.  
Before month end

He looked at me..

Me: Please

He took out his wallet. Took out R200 notes  
that made up R600..

Ken: Here

Me: We only asked for R500

Ken: I don't have change.. The R100 is on me

We took it..

Gabi: Thank you so much.. We will pay you back

Ken: Yeah.. Sure

He walked to the back...

I looked at Gabi..

Me: We need to pay this man back every cent

Gabi: We will

We left the pub...



YOLANDA (BARBIE)

Mom: Stop crying Yoli

Me: We had some problems, I thought we were going to fix things

Mom: I don't understand, He was here

Me: I know.. I also thought we could fix things. Worse now he's influenced his sister against me. My best friend

Mom: Calm down, I'm sure it'll be sorted. You guys need to all calm down

Me: I am calm Ma, I just.. I just need to move on

with my life from here

Mom: Don't make any rash decisions

Me: He told me he has fallen for someone, Then why did he string me along?

Mom: It's okay.. It's going to be okay

She hugged me...

KENZO

I went to check on Pakiso..

Me: Aii No.. You clean more better than Spura

did

Pakiso: Yizo Ta Kenzo, Mina ngibonga nje ispani (I am grateful for the job)

Me: So.. Musa yi suster yakho? (Musa is your sister)

Pakiso: Sure Grootmaan

Me: I see

Pakiso: Why ubuza Grootmaan? (Why are you asking)

Me: Just making conversation

He chuckled..

Pakiso: If uyamfuna Grootmaan yena she's single. Since ibhari ye ex yakhe yadlala ngaye, Kaze wabamba (If you want her she's single. Since her baby daddy left her she hasn't been in a relationship)

Me: I hear you, Ya yena yiTosi (she's beautiful) ..  
Here R250

Pakiso: Ta Grootmaan (Thank you)

Me: See you tomorrow morning

Pakiso: Sure

I went back to my office. If they good, I know he'll go home and tell her about the conversation we had..

MUSA

I wiped her with a towel.. She tried reaching for the Vaseline..

Me: Yima Sedi (wait)

I kept on thinking about the money I got from Kenzo. I know Kenzo in passing, Heard about him a lot. You know people talk, And for someone who owns a Pub in the hood he gotta be dangerous because the hood is.

If I don't pay him back, I don't want him threatening and harassing us. So long I'll do good at work, I'll be able to pay him back..

Mom: Musa

She walked in..

Mom: How did you buy the tin fish and beans?  
Most of all where did you get money for transport?

Me: Gabi

Mom: Gabi is not working

Me: She has a boyfriend

Mom: Musa.. I was once 29

I closed my eyes and exhaled..

Me: I borrowed from a.. Loan shark

Mom: Musa!!

Me: I know

Mom: Which one?

Me: Ken

Mom: What's happening between you two?

Me: Nothing

Mom: I am not saying go celibate, I'm not saying that due to my personal experiences don't date and due to yours too

Me: I know

Mom: Just be careful, Be very careful

Me: I am careful Ma.. Nothing is happening between Ken and I

KENZO



Kurai and Barbie were going at it on Instagram lives..

I shook my head..

The news was catching up on Twitter, As the most Infamous Musa Khawula ran through their clips..

Me: Come on Kurai

Barbie: "I know your brother is dangerous, Probably will have me killed after this but fuck him and fuck you!!"

Musa Khawula:

"Video of Barbie the slay queen who was dating her best friend's brother. Kurai, Reports that they no longer friends. She no longer is dating her Best friend's dangerous brother too. Kenzo Khaba, Known as KK. A business man"

He also uploaded a picture of Kurai and I, I shook my head..

.

To be continued

....

NB:

Musa Khawula, Not our Musa. There's another one on Twitter doing pop culture and airs news

about famous people

## THE NARCISSIST

13

### MUSA

The next morning on my way to work. I was on Twitter, Keeping me entertained from boredom..

There's this guy on Twitter by the name of Musa Khawula. He serves tea about almost every celebrity out there. I was shocked when he reported on Kurai, She's a social media influencer and a dedicated Slay Queen. I was shocked that she is Kenzo's sister and her best friend was dating Kenzo.

Was a lot of tea to take in I swear...

I got to work, And we started preparing for the day ahead..

KENZO

I was eating breakfast. Kurai walked in..

Kurai: Good morning

Me: Morning

She sat down..

Kurai: I'm sorry for dragging you into this mess

Me: Kurai I am a business man, Being dragged into issues that have nothing to do with me will be a serious problem

Kurai: I know, I truly apologize

Me: Just leave Barbie, If she drags it. Then it's on her, Hit her with silence

Kurai: She is not worth it indeed

Me: I don't want something happening to her and I become the first suspect, When I had nothing to do with it

Kurai: Understandable

My phone vibrated.. It was Ace

Me: Excuse Me

I took it and went to answer outside..

Me: Eyy

Ace: She works at Pnp, The one at the garage

Me: Ayt thank you Ntwana

Ace: Sharp

I walked back in..

Me: Still have an appointment with your therapist?

Kurai: 09:00am

Me: I'll drive you

Kurai: Ohw.. Okay

MUSA

It gets busy around here. Long distant buses stop here for refreshments. They on a schedule, So we have to be quick on our feet..

I was busy stocking up the shelves, The two queues were long. Everyone was busy..

It got better at 13:00 in the afternoon..

Manager: You know Musa. I'm impressed, Today was your first busy day and you handled it well. Very well, Shelves are stocked up. You were able to work well under pressure and you are killing the till too. The Temps we've had before, Weren't as dedicated

Me: Thank you so much

Manager: You can continue working at my till under my login details, If you get confused please ask Thandeka for help. I'm going out for



lunch, I'll take over when I come back

Me: Yes Mam

She walked out..

Thandeka: After her, You can go

Me: No problem

It was a bit quiet now, I took out my phone and kept busy with it. It was not until Thandeka poked me on the shoulder..

Thandeka: Hey Musa, Isn't that Kurai the Influencer?

I checked. It was her, She was with Kenzo..

Me: I.. It is her

Thandeka: Shit.. She beautiful, Her pictures don't lie

Me: She does

Thandeka: Is that the dangerous Brother?

Me: Yeap

Thandeka: They have good genes

They took some water, Sweets and snacks.  
They came to pay...

Thandeka: Hi

Kenzo: Hey

Thandeka: Kurai.. Hi.. I'm a big fan

Kurai looked at her, Smiled and went back to  
her phone..

Kenzo: Musa.. I didn't know you worked here

Me: I didn't announce it

He chuckled. Kurai looked at me..

Thandeka: R150.. Cash or card?

Kenzo: Card

Thandeka: My speed point is not working, Musa do you mind taking this?

Me: No problem

They came to my side..

Kenzo: A little smile.. Gives out good customer service

Me: I'm not a clown

Kenzo: No one said you were

Me: I greeted back when you greeted

Kenzo: Of course

Me: R150

He took out his card and paid..

Me: Have a nice day

Kenzo: You too

They walked out...

Thandeka: You know them?

Me: The brother, He owns a Pub in my hood

KENZO

We got into the car. Kurai looked at me..

Me: What?

Kurai: I don't know.. You accompany me to my therapist, Wait for my session. Driving me back home you specifically ask if we can get refreshments here. Considering we passed 2 other gas stations

Me: I'm suspecting I have to say something but  
I don't have all the information

Kurai: You like that girl.. The cashier

Me: I don't know what you talking about

Kurai: I know pretty soon she'll be walking  
around the house in a towel

Me: I'm dropping you off at home

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

14

MUSA

I was very tired when knocking off time came,  
Couldn't wait to go home and rest.

We locked up, Thandeka took a different taxi to  
her hood. It was easier for her to get one than  
me..

I waited for mine, Then a car pulled up next to  
me.. Kenzo got out of the car..

He came to me..

Me: Seeing you twice in one day, That's gotta



count for something

Kenzo: Yes.. It does

Me: You were just in the neighborhood?

Kenzo: No.. I came to fetch you

Me: Excuse me?

Kenzo: I hope you'll pick up my statement that I'm putting down. I will be picking you up from work, Driving you to work too. Give you lunch money until you understand that I like you and want a relationship with you

Me: I don't think so.. Matter of fact, A taxi is

going to pass by now and y-

Kenzo: Get in the car Musa

I looked at him, He had a serious look to him..

Kenzo: Please

I looked around, No taxi was passing..

Me: Okay.. What the hell

He went and opened the door for me, I got in...

Kenzo: Wanna grab something to eat before I drop you off at home?

Me: That would be lovely.. Thank you

YOLANDA (BARBIE)

We were preparing the table for dinner..

Dad: So what are you going to do now Yoli?

Me: What do you mean?

Dad: I mean in terms of employment, What are you going to do? Or you wanna go back to school?

Me: I haven't thought that far Dad

Dad: You can't sit here at home and not do anything

Me: I just.. I'm in a bad state currently, I'd appreciate it if I could get some time to myself

Mom: She's just gotten out of a bad relationship

Dad: That's not an excuse to sit and not wanna do anything

Me: I'll try and see Dad what I'll do

MUSA

We drove up to some restaurant for a meal.

Kenzo gave me permission to order anything I wanted on the menu...

I ordered a glass of wine and a pasta dish..

Kenzo settled for sea food..

Me: Anything special about this restaurant?

Kenzo: No.. I just like the food

Me: You said you liked me and want a relationship with you

Kenzo: Correct

Me: I read about you and Barbie on Twitter

Kenzo: Barbie and I, We no longer together

Me: I know.. I've read.. I'm just asking because Barbie is beautiful, A beautiful Slay Queen. How do you go from there and wanna settle for a girl from humble beginnings.. Can you explain that?

Kenzo: Nope.. Can you?

Me: I am not looking for drama, Nor stress. I am just trying to settle into my life, I just got a job and I wanna focus on the positive

He got up from his chair. Took my napkin. He pulled my chair from the table, Placed the napkin on my thighs.. He placed his hands on my shoulders and whispered in my ear..

Kenzo: I don't care about your stress, You trying to settle into your new life. That's not my business, My business is that I want you. I like you very much from that night I saw you at my Pub

I got goosebumps...

Kenzo: Kind of a waste of time to be dragging something that we both know might happen along the way. So maybe after this dinner we can start the picking up and dropping off situation with a hug and a kiss

He kissed me on the cheek..

He went back to his seat, I looked at him..

Me: You still haven't answered my question

Kenzo: What was the question?

Me: Why me?

Kenzo: Why not you? What makes you think that you are not good enough nor at a physical disadvantage compared to Barbie? I approached you didn't I? That's gotta count for something



Me: I can't deal cheating

Kenzo: Me too

Me: Do you take out all the girls who come into your pub for dinner and hit on them?

Kenzo: Only you

He took out his phone from his pocket and placed it on the table. It was facing up, Usually Sedi's father used to put his phone upside down...

Me: I have a 3 year old Daughter

Kenzo: I'm sure she's adorable and would like to

meet her at a later stage when you comfortable with us

He took his phone and handed it to me..

Kenzo: Call home so they don't get worried if you show up later than your knocking off time and kindly save your number on my phone

He continued eating. I looked at him and smiled a little..

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

MUSA

He dropped me off at home, Straight at the gate.  
I got out, He got out too..

Me: Thank you for the dinner

Ken: Thank you for letting me take you out for  
dinner

Me: I should go in

Ken: A hug?

I hugged him, He squeezed me tight. I saw the  
curtain in the lounge moving. My Mother and  
her nosey self.. We broke the hug, He still had

his hands around my waist.

Ken: What time are you going in tomorrow morning?

Me: by 7am I should be on my way to work

Ken: 7am it I-

I felt his phone vibrating..

He took it out. It was a text message..

Ken: I have to go, It's my buddy.. I'll fetch you tomorrow morning

Me: Okay

He kissed me on the cheek, And then I walked in..

I opened the door, My mother was already standing in the kitchen..

Me: Mother

Mom: Musa

Me: I should bath and sleep, Is Lesedi still awake?

Mom: She's sleeping

Me: Okay

Mom: Anything you wanna tell me?

Me: Absolutely not

Mom: I see

KEN

I drove up to his house, A client of mine. Ace was already parked at the gate.. I got out of the car and walked in...

Ace: What makes me mad is that Umdala for

lamasimba owenzayo!

A little boy was sitting on the couch, Ace had his gun pointed at the client..

Client: Ken.. Ken moss sikhulumile,  
Ngizok'bhatala (We spoke about this Ken, I'm going to pay you)

I walked to the little man..

Me: Hi

He looked at me..

Me: What's your name?

Boy: Lonwabo

Me: Nice name

He kept quiet..

I got up..

Me: 4 months. 4 months now since you owe me,  
I don't think you'll be able to pay me back 30k

Client: I'm really trying to get the money

Me: I know



I walked up to Ace and nodded.. I made my way to the kitchen. He pulled the trigger. 5 times!!.. The screams didn't even last for that long..

I turned around. The Dad was on the floor bleeding, The boy on the couch bleeding..

Me: I'll get the gloves.. Robbery gone wrong

I walked out, I saw no neighbours. It's good that Ace's gun has a silencer..

MUSA

After bathing I laid down on the bed, Next to Lesedi. I checked Ken's number..

I still couldn't process what happened today,  
Nor do I have anything to say about it..

I checked my airtime, I had R10..

I checked my data. 2GB. I checked him on  
whatsapp, He was there..

I texted him "Hi". It only had one tick..

How is it possible to suffer for so long then get  
a job and a man at the same time? It's like God  
is showering me with blessings to show off or  
something..

I yawned.. Then called him..

He picked up..

Ken: Yeah?

Me: Hey.. It's.. It's Musa

Ken: I didn't check my caller ID

Me: Just wanted to know if you got home safe,  
If you home

Ken: Not yet.. I'm checking out a friend

Me: Ohw the one who texted you

Ken: Yeah.. Are you okay?

Me: I'm good.. Was just checking if you got home safe

Ken: Smitten already?

Me: I was just being nice

[2 Min remaining]

Me: I have to go, My airtime is almost finished

Ken: Good night, I'll see you tomorrow morning

Me: Good night

I hung up..

Mom: Musa.. It's time to pray

Me: I'm coming

KEN

I put my phone away and looked at Ace..

Ace: You can leave, I got it

Me: Are you sure?

Ace: Yeah

Me: I'll call Cebekhulu

Ace: Sharp

I handed him the gloves and walked out to my car. I took out my phone and called Cebekhulu..

Him: Ken

Me: Murder of a child and his father, I'll send you the address. I want you to handle the case

Him: How bad?

Me: Not too bad, Just we were parked by the gate. We must've been seen

Him: Fine I'll handle it

Me: Cool.. Keep me posted

I hung up and got into my car.. I checked Musa'a number. It's Mtn. I sure do hope it is and not a sim swap situation..

I bought her 30GB, Directly got uploaded to her number. I checked whatsapp, She had sent me a "Hi". I smiled a little and started the car..

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

MUSA

The following morning I woke up early to prepare for work. I even bathe Sedi and prepared porridge for her and my Mother before I left..

Per the agreement, Kenzo came to fetch me. It was 6:45am and already he was in a hurry..

Me: I received the data, Thank you

Kenzo: It's a pleasure Mami

He looked good today in casual, He even had a cap on..



Kenzo: I'm in a rush today

Me: Why?

Kenzo: I'm closing down the other pub

Me: Why is that?

Kenzo: It's not generating the profit that I want it to generate, It'll end up eating from my own pocket

Me: I thought you only had one pub. The one I know

Kenzo: Two pubs and two bars in town. Just this one pub is not doing well and I don't have much time in my hands to constantly monitor it, Rather close down before it eats out of my pocket

Me: How did you get money to start?

Kenzo: My father. I started the pub you know, from scratch. Used to be something small then I grew into it

Me: Your father gave you money?

Kenzo: When he retired yaa. Then he also took out a loan for me

Me: That's nice, He truly helped you

Kenzo: He did

Me: What about your Mother?

He paused..

Kenzo: She died

Me: I'm sorry to hear that

Kenzo: Was a long time ago don't sweat it

KURAI (KENZO'S SISTER)

She was sitting by the window in the room,  
Knitting. She's in a wheelchair..

Me: Ma

She looked at me..

Mom: Kurai

Nurse: 1 hour

Me: Thank you

I walked up to her..

Mom: It's good to see you. Each time I see you

it's like you have grown a year or two

I hugged her..

Mom: And you smell good

Me: You too.. For someone who lives in a home,  
You do

Mom: Rehabilitation center

Me: Yes that

Mom: How is your Brother?

Me: He's good..

Mom: Still doesn't want nothing to do with me?

Me: Kenzo considers you dead

Mom: I don't blame him

Me: He's all grown up now, He's a man

Mom: I wish I could see him

Me: Both Kenzo and I, We went through a lot. I don't want nothing to do with Dad, He wants nothing to do with you

Mom: Dad did nothing wrong Kurai, He tried to

get you and Kenzo

Me: I was repeatedly raped Ma, Dad could've tried more harder

Mom: He couldn't.. I was with a dangerous man, He feared for his life and feared putting you guys in danger

Me: If I may.. What exactly happened between you and Kenzo? So much that he hates you. I tried asking him, He didn't wanna tell me. I remember bits and pieces of it

Mom: A lot sweetheart, A lot that I am ashamed to talk about it

Me: He's a Narcissist Ma. Kenzo dates women who are strong, Just so he can control them and break them down to their last insanity

Mom: Kenzo is going to look for me in every woman that he dates. Him breaking them down, Is his way of breaking me down. It's how he gains back his power from me. He will never have a healthy relationship until he deals with his his demons. I had hoped by now he would've came so we could talk about it. I'm not going to deny his pain, Nor will I justify myself. I just want him to know and hear it from me that I am sorry, And that he should go on and live his life be free

Me: I don't know what happened, But he hates you more than you think



Mom: I asked the Psychiatric around here. Told him exactly what I put my Son through. He told me that Kenzo was going to grow up and be an unintended sociopath or Narcissist. He can't be a psychopath, A psychopath doesn't have a soul. He takes care of you so he has a soul, Just dark enough to do things that he knows are wrong but continue to do them anyway

Me: I will try and talk to him

Mom: No don't, Don't force him.. Here, I made this for you. It's a scarf

Me: You didn't know I was coming today

Mom: I was going to give it to you anyway, The day you came

MUSA

Kenzo did drop me off at work, He even gave me R200 for lunch..

Me: Thandeka can I ask you something?

Thandeka: Yaa.. Sure

Me: Do you think it's possible to get both of best worlds at the same time

Thandeka: A bit confused.. Find me

Me: Relationship and Job at the same time?

Thandeka: Yes.. I guess so.. Why ask?

Me: Just asking

Thandeka: Okay

KENZO

I was at the Pub&Grill that was closing down..

Cops walked in.. Cebekhulu and his colleagues..

Cebe: Good morning, Are you Kenzo Khaba?

Me: Yes.. Who are you?

Cebe: Detective Cebekhulu

Me: May I help you? And also how did you find me here?

Cebe: We went to your other place of business, They referred us here

Me: Can I help you?

Cebe: Do you know a.. Bab'Mthombeni?

Me: Yes.. He borrows money from me

Cebe: When last did you see him?

Me: Yesterday when I had gone to collect. He was owing me 30k, I paid him a visit

Cebe: At about what time?

Me: In the afternoon around 15:00

Cebe: Do you have an Alibi for yesterday say around 20:00?

Me: Yes.. I was with a special friend. Fetched her from work, We went to have dinner then I passed by at the pub met a friend and went home

Cebe: I see

Me: What is this all about?

Cebe: He was killed last night together with his Son. So far it looks like a home invasion gone wrong

Me: Dread!!.. He died with my 30k

Cebe: We will be in touch

Me: Yes Sir

They walked away.. That went smoothly..

.

To be continued

We having a power failure they fixing something.  
Apologies for the delayed morning insert

THE NARCISSIST

17

KENZO

Later on during the day I went to see the man  
who helps me. Help cleanse me each time an  
unwanted death surfaces from my side. Help  
cleanse me of bad luck and unwanted  
consequences..

We were buying a Goat for yesterday's murder  
that I committed....

Masebe: You going to need two, For that guy and his Son, Also for that one who was working for you

Me: Spura, They said they won't avenge

Masebe: And you believe them?

Me: Of course not

Seller: It's going to be R5 800 both Goats

Me: Shuuuuuu

Seller: Zintle kakhulu futhi ziyabukeka (They



healthy)

Me: R5 800.. Not even a discount?

Seller: You can try from the ones that cost R1400-R1800

I looked at them..

Masebe: We will take one that's R1400 and one that's R2900

Me: At least

Masebe: You need to go slow on killing for at least another 6 months

Me: I'll try

MUSA

I spent R50 from the R200 that Ken gave me. I spent it on lunch. I'll use the R150 to buy food and nappies for Sedi..

Might not be enough but if Ken keeps on giving me the R200 unprovoked. R150 saved from it can go a long way with food and other necessities..

I was so happy at least something good,  
Something positive has happened in my life.  
Despite Pakiso and my whole life and all that has happened, There's a light at the end of the

tunnel..

Manager: Tomorrow you starting officially, Are you ready?

Me: Yes Mam

Manager: Of course you are, You've been working so well and showing initiative

Me: Thank you

Manager: And I have something to run by you

Me: Yes?

Manager: You weren't up for a temp job, You were up for a permanent position

Me: Are you serious?

Manager: Look around. It's just Thandeka and I, We only said Temp just to see the initiative. I'm very impressed and the head office will be too

Me: Are you for real?

Manager: Yes

Tears filled my eyes..

Manager: I'm not sure if you happy or..

Me: I am.. I am happy.. Wow.. Thank you so much. I promise I won't disappoint you

Manager: I know you won't. Please come read the contract and sign tomorrow morning don't forget the letter from your bank

Me: Yes Mam

We walked to her office with my wiping my tears. Thandeka looked at me..

Thandeka: You deserve it

KENZO

We loaded the Goats on Masebe's van..

Masebe: I'll see you tomorrow morning before the sun is up. 5am

Me: I'll be there

Masebe: Very well

I went back to my car.. I took my phone and called my favourite restaurant..

Me: Hi.. I would like to make a reservation for tonight at 19:00

Voice: How many people?

Me: Two

Voice: Names

Me: Kenzo and Musa

Voice: Mr Khaba

Me: Yes

Voice: We missed you around here. Thought your girlfriend's name was Barbie

Me: It's a different girl

Voice: Yes Sir I get you

Me: Thank you

Voice: See you tonight then

Me: Very well

I hung up...

MUSA

I read and signed the contract. I had my own copy too. My own login details. The works..

Manager: Take the rest of the day off. It's 14:00



Me: Are you sure? I can stay until closing time

Manager: I insist, Pass by at the bank. I doubt tomorrow you'll get time

Me: Yes Mam

Thandeka: I'll see you tomorrow

Me: Tomorrow it is

I went to take my things then texted Kenzo that I'm being let off earlier..

.

To be continued

# THE NARCISSIST

18

MUSA

He told me to wait for a while and I did. I would've taken a taxi but we had an agreement, That greatly benefits me. I'll be saving on transportation and using my money for more important things. A beneficial situation goes a long way..

He did come to fetch me..

Ken: Thank you for letting me know, You didn't have too

Me: We had an agreement and I thought it would be polite to let you know. Didn't want you coming and not finding me later on

Ken: I appreciate that

(Silence)

Ken: What are you going to do at home?

Me: Nothing much, Just rest. Tomorrow I'm officially starting on a permanent position than the temp one

Ken: Wow.. More reason to celebrate. How about I pick you up at 19:00, We go out for

dinner

Me: Okay.. I love food, Can't say No to food

Ken: Musa.. It's a date

Me: A date?

Ken: Official date, Made reservations

Me: Wow.. Okay.. Unexpected, This day keeps on getting better

Ken: What do you say?

Me: I say if we pass by at Capitec, There's

something I need there then we will go to the date

Ken: Perfect

We drove to Capitec. Drove around to find one that wasn't full, And we did. They assisted me with the paper. It was the most important for work tomorrow, Then Ken dropped me off at home..

Ken: See you at 19:00 actually before that time, We have to be there at 19:00

Me: No problem

Ken: Wait.. Let me fix that

He realigned my wig, Moving it from my face.  
Then leaned closer and kissed me. A felt a chill  
down my spine..

He then broke the kiss and wiped my lips..

Ken: See you then

Me: Yaa

I struggled opening the door, But eventually got  
it. I got out and slipped. He covered his eyes  
with his hand and shook his head trying not to  
laugh..

Me: Uhm bye

Ken: Your bag

He reached for it and handed it to me....

Me: Thank you

I closed the door and walked faster to the yard..

Me: Get a grip on Musa

I walked all the way, Mom and Sedi were sitting outside. Sedi ran up to me, I picked her up..

Me: Hello Sisi

She just smiled at me whilst clapping her hands..

Mom: uEarly today, Everything okay?

Me: Yes

Mom: Yini?

Me: I'm starting tomorrow but it's a permanent position, Meaning the money will be better

Mom: Aww weh Maa.. Usho?

Me: Serious



Mom: Siyayibonga Inkosi uSimakade (We thank the Lord)

Thought I could soften her up with good news first before telling her about my date tonight...

KENZO

I passed Pakiso eating outside..

Me: Sho

Pakiso: Sho Bozza

I was impressed by how clean the yard is. He seems very dedicated..

I walked inside, They were packing the alcohol that came from the other Pub into the shelves..

Me: Good work Sonny

Sonny: Yizo Bozza

I walked to my office..

I was thinking of buying Musa a new phone, But showering her with too much gifts so early will overwhelm her. Let me not push and actually go with a slow pace...

I checked a few things before going home to freshen up..

MUSA

I cooked for my Mother, Lesedi, and Pakiso. I cooked Pap, Lucky star tin fish mixed with beans. I had also bought atchaar from the local shop..

Mom: You deserve this, You deserve these blessings. Things you've done for us are amazing

Me: As long as we happy here at home, Have food and everything then I'm happy too

Mom: Well with regards to your new relationship, I bless you. I'm happy that you have a job, So when it gets tough you won't

bekezela

Me: True.. I'm still speechless and grateful to God. Blessings upon blessings

Mom: You deserve every bit of it

Me: Thank you Ma

Mom: Go and prepare Phela, He will be here soon

Me: Alright.. I've already cooked for you guys

Mom: Thank you

KEN

I drove to the house to prepare for my date..

Kurai: That look is good. Not too formal

Me: I was gunning for that

Kurai: You really into this girl?

Me: I do.. Very much

Kurai: She's different. I'm not judging

Me: She is and I like that, More my style. Barbie came with you I was single and yaa she was

available

Kurai: As long as you happy, I'm happy

Me: Why you so nice?

Kurai: I'm always nice

Me: Something happened today?

Kurai: Nope.. Nothing happened

Me: If you say so

MUSA

I had to bath again, Bath the sweating away from work..

Me: How do I look?

Mom: You look nice

I have maybe 3 best best outfits, I don't usually wear them. Only on special occasions and this one was special enough.

I played around with a bit of makeup that was about to finish soon..

Mom: You gonna come back today right? First day tomorrow

Me: Yes Ma

Mom: Okay then Sisi.. Enjoy

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

19

MUSA

He fetched me for our date, He was looking rather pleasant. Well dressed, Clean and Smelling good..

We drove up to this fancy restaurant, I even felt



under dressed. We were greeted by the waitress who took us straight to our table, Already reserved for us. There were flowers on the table..

Ken: For you

Me: Ohh my, Thank you

He pulled a chair for me, I sat down..

Waitress took the bottle of wine..

Waitress: Your bottle of Merlot

He poured in our glasses, Pouring a favorable amount of wine..

Waitress: Please check out the starters. I'll be right back to take your order

She walked away..

Me: This seems like a nice restaurant, And expensive too

Ken: Not too expensive but yes it is nice, And the food is too

Me: I've never been into such a restaurant, They've always been a distant admiration for me

Ken: Well now you here, Dreams do come true

I chuckled..

Me: I dated this guy whom I truly loved

Ken: What happened?

Me: He gave a child and went to live his life. The humiliation was the worst of it all

Ken: What happened?

Me: When Sedi was born, I contacted him so he could do what's right. He told me that I should've considered abortion, He said he's not going to tie himself to such a responsibility that he never asked for. Blamed me for everything

that I should've been more responsible, It's my responsibility to make sure that I don't fall pregnant. Why didn't I use contraception, It's free at the clinics

Ken: Where did you guys meet?

Me: In a club. It was a friend's birthday and he was there, He told me I'm trying to get money from him by falling pregnant on purpose and that he didn't take me for one of those girls

Ken: I'm sorry to hear that

Me: When he was gone, I swore that I was done with love and relationships but here I am today

I took the napkin and wiped my tears before they fell..

Ken: Here you are indeed

He grabbed my hand..

Ken: Just because one Man couldn't love you right, Doesn't mean every man out there is like that. I would like to be given a chance to disappoint you on my own

I laughed..

Ken: You beautiful, Interesting and don't take shit. You are your own woman, And you know exactly what you want. That's what I love most

about you

I blushed..

Waitress: Excuse me, Are you ready to order or should I give you more time?

Ken: Just two minutes please

We took the menus and looked at them..

Ken: I'm ready to pay for all his sins and make it right. Change your perception again when it comes to relationships

I looked at him, He was fixated on the menu...

KURAI

I wrote a note for Ken, Pasted it on the fridge..

We still keep that old tradition of leaving notes on the fridge of our whereabouts.

I took my overnight bag, Released the dogs and went out. My boyfriend who is very married was already parked waiting for me.

Ken provides for me, But I also provide for myself. Married rich men in South Africa love to be entertained by girls like us when they bored of their wives and we down for entertainment..

Him: My sugar pie

Me: Hi Daddy

I gave him a hug and a kiss..

Me: Where are we off too?

Him: Some club, Been working too hard I need a break

Me: Let's go then

MUSA

We were on the dessert now. The starters and



main course were delicious..

Me: I am full

Ken: You hardly touched your dessert

Me: Says a guy who stopped on the main course

The waitress came with the bill and takeaways.  
I got some food for Moms at home and Sedi..

Ken paid and tipped the waitress..

Me: How is Pakiso handling his job?

Ken: He's doing well actually

Me: That's good

Ken: What's on your mind?

Me: I just don't want him to flunk

Ken: He's doing pretty well so far, Give him the benefit of the doubt

Me: I hope so

I yawned..

Ken: Let's get you home

Me: Yaa I have an early day tomorrow morning

Ken: So do I, We having some family traditional ceremony

Me: Ohw.. During the week on a Thursday?

Ken: It's overdue

Me: Okay

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

## MUSA

Life seemed to be moving in a better direction. Ken and I were officially dating, Work was great and home. Home there's still ups and downs, Especially since our cousin Thuli moved in with us, She spends more time with Pakiso than she does with us. My Aunt put her out officially because she can't deal with her anymore, My Mom decided to take her in. As her sister's child, To avoid her wandering about as a girl..

Another thing, He got paid sometime. Him and Thuli went to get the things they smoke, He missed about 3 days of work. Went back high and Ken fired him, Got another person. Currently now, He just sits in his room with Thuli, Most of the time..

It was a Saturday morning and I was off. I prepared breakfast for everyone and put it on the table as I was cleaning outside..

Made peanut butter sandwiches and juice. My Mom and I, We eat 3 slices each. Sedi eats soft porridge, And the rest of the bread slices. I prepared for Thuli and Pakiso.

My Mom and Sedi were still sleeping..

I went back inside the house when I was done outside. To eat, And the unfortunate part. All the sandwiches were missing on the table. What remained were two glasses of juice...

I went to check on my Mother and Sedi, They

were still sleeping. There's only one explanation, Pakiso and Thuli took the sandwiches. All of them..

They have a habit of eating everything, They never ask who has eaten and who hasn't. Deep down I was angry, But stopped myself from confronting him because then it's going to turn ugly. Pakiso has been problematic ever since he lost his job..

Last time Gabi was here, She was smoking outside. By the stoep, Pakiso confronted her and told her not to smoke in the yard, Meanwhile he brings his people to smoke at the back. Drugs and Nyoape..

I have so much anger against him, If it was up to me. I would cut all ties with him. There's

nothing painful like going through depression,  
Because of your sibling...

KENZO

I looked at Ace approaching..

Ace: Hey

Me: Hey

That ritual we had to do together, So we both  
were wearing iziphandla. Two of them and  
brown in colour..

Ace: How is it going with you?

Me: It's going good

Ace: Ready to do this?

Me: Yeah

We were at the shooting range..

MUSA

I got back from the shop, From buying another bread. I haven't been paid yet, I am using the money that Ken gives me for lunch..

I came back home to Lesedi crying. She even



had hiccups. I walked over to my Mom's bedroom, Sedi was sitting up straight and crying..

My Mom was still sleeping facing up. The most unusual thing was that she's a light sleeper, Sedi crying should've woken her up..

I took Sedi and looked at my Mom, I don't think she was breathing. I checked her, And she wasn't breathing. I felt my heart sinking to my knees, I felt weak and accidentally dropped Lesedi on the floor and screamed.

KURAI

I was on a weekend vacation with the girls per my Brother's promise..

I held the pregnancy test, It tasted positive.

Shit!!!!..

I can't be pregnant, My boyfriend is fucken married. This is going to create some turmoil. He promised to fund me, So long I don't fall pregnant..

I quickly hid it when Gugu came back into the room. It was the 4 us, The other were sleeping on the other room..

Gugu: uRight?

Me: Yes

Gugu: We all ready for breakfast

Me: Okay I'll be there

Gugu: Are you sure that you okay?

Me: Yes.. I'll be right there

MUSA

The reality of the situation, Yes my Mother was no more. Last night we went to bed, We slept there wasn't any signs of her being sick. She actually went to bed like how she normally does.. I saw no signs of anything..

I realized now as my Aunt was holding Sedi,  
That she hurt her leg as I dropped her. My Aunt  
was here, Thuli's Mom. A few neighbours too  
and we were waiting for the necessary people  
to come..

It felt unreal, Felt unbelievable. Couldn't grasp  
anything. Couldn't comprehend, My mother was  
very strong. Dying just like that without any  
signs of her being sick was devastating..

We were about to have a better life than this  
one, A life at least worth living but now.

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

KEN

Me: Fuck, Even after this long. My ears still get affected by the noise

Ace: You went Ham on the gun

I took out my phone and checked. I had got a message from Musa. Telling me that her mother passed on. I stopped walking

Ace: Are you okay?

Me: Musa's Mom passed on

Ace: That's bad Man.. What happened?

Me: I don't know

I called her but her phone was on voicemail...

MUSA

We started preparing after they took my Mother away.. My Aunt has put mother on her funeral cover..

Menzi walked in with his wife..

He greeted..

It's so embarrassing and shameful that at least employed, He couldn't even do a funeral cover for his own Mother. Had my Mother lived on to see me through, Would've done one for her...

He asked what happened, My Aunt narrated what I had told her earlier on..

Menzi: Did she seem sick?

Me: Mom was not sick

Menzi: So what's the plan now? What happens?

Aunt: They took her away, High possibility is a heart attack

Menzi: Not shocking. Mom has been going through under a lot of stress, Pakiso and Mu-

Me: Sorry? What about me?

Menzi: No matter how much you try to make yourself seem perfect but you aren't. Mom was taking care of your Daughter, You saw how the situation was at home still you went to fall pregnant instead of actually focusing on your life and making something out of it

Me: Woow

Aunt: I don't think we should be exchanging words



Menzi: I'm just saying since Mom is gone. The glue that kept us together. It's gone, So there's no reason to link myself to you guys anymore. Even Pakiso can abuse you here, Don't ever think of calling me. We are all old. We all shall live our lives

Me: Very well

My Aunt shook my head..

Khosi: Uhm.. Is there anything I can help with?

Me: No.. You don't have too. You are his wife, He's cut ties so basically you are not considered Umakoti

Menzi: See why I cut ties? She's here to help because of my Mother. She's not here to help because of you

Me: Excuse Me

Aunt: Where are you going?

Me: To throw myself over the bridge

Menzi: Wouldn't that be wonderful

KEN

I signed..

Me: Thank you

The delivery guy got into his bakkie. I saw  
Musa's best friend walking in..

Her: Hi

Me: Hey.. Gabi right?

Her: Yes

Me: May I help you with something?

Gabi: Just wanted a plate and a drink

Me: Ohw okay

Gabi: So you and Musa are dating now? Saw her whatsapp stats update not long ago. Asked her about it, She didn't deny

Me: I'm not denying either

Gabi: Wow.. Amazing

Me: Sarcasm?

Gabi: No just weirdly unbelievable.. I mean she's not your type

Me: What is my type?

Gabi: I've seen your ex girlfriend on social media and Musa is nothing like that

Me: That's why she's my type

Gabi: Okay

Me: She told me her Mother passed on. As her best friend, Shouldn't you be there comforting her?

Gabi: That's why I'm here to grab something to eat first

My half sister walked in. When Dad left my Mother, Or when he left us. He went on to have another family with another woman. They had a

daughter. Basically I'm the only guy and the first born to two younger sisters. She's 2 years younger than Kurai.

Me: Kodessa

My Dad gave us names starting with K. Kodessa lives with Dad, Just the two of them now. Her Mom passed on 3 years ago.

She hugged me and kissed me on my cheek..

Me: What are you doing here?

Kodessa: Was in the neighbourhood

Me: Let's get in to have a drink and something

to eat

Kodessa: Still have those ribs with barbecue sauce?

I took her bag and held it..

Me: You know

MUSA

My Aunt came to me, I was standing outside with Sedi on my back..

Aunt: Don't let him get to you

I kept quiet..

Aunt: Grace loved you, You know that

Me: I know

Aunt: She'd still expect the same respect you showed her while she was alive, In death

Me: I understand

Aunt: I'll hold Lesedi for you, We'll be sitting on the mattress as you cook. I don't trust your Brother's wife to cook for us

Me: Me too



.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

22

MUSA

Gabi came to see me, I was almost done cooking..

Gabi: I don't know what I'd do if my Mom passed on now

Me: What hurts me the most is that she died, And I haven't done nothing for her. There's so much that I wanted to do for her

Gabi: I'm sure she knows, So how are you going to live with Pakza. It's onky going to be the two of you now?

Me: One part just wants me to move out for my own sanity. Just rent a room, But another part of me. If I leave this house, He's going to turn it into something else

Gabi: Konje even if he does anything. You can't chase him out. All the 3 of you are in the house permit. You, Him, And Menzi

Me: I don't wanna chase him out. Even if he wasn't in the permit. The are times when he makes me so much angry that I'd hate him, But no part of me wishes him bad things. I just wish

he could get his shit together, Fix his life because Menzi was right in some way. We all Adults. Our Parents are no more, None should be a burden nor a responsibility to the other one. We all should be finding ways to survive our own Independency, So long he doesn't intervene with my safety and my Daughter's safety then we will be fine

Gabi: Why don't you ask for financial help from Ken? I mean he does have money. You can also live with him

Me: Leave home to go live with my boyfriend? That setup doesn't end well. I am his girlfriend, Not his orphan. He's not entitled to actually take up responsibility of my life especially when we not even married. Men take advantage of situations like these to abuse you, Why would I

put myself through that? At least I have a home and a job. I will survive

Gabi: Okay I didn't wanna tell you this, But.. I saw him at the pub. He was with another girl. They were cosy, It's not his ex. Another girl

Me: And?

Gabi: He's cheating Musa

Me: That's what you say, Until I catch him then it's a hearsay

Gabi: I saw him

Me: I don't care.. Even if you saw them kissing I

don't care, Gabi my Mother passed on today  
and you here with a tattle tale

Gabi: I'm sorry.. I was just looking out for you

Me: I never asked you did I?

Gabi: Shuu.. Let me go obviously you are in your  
feelings

She walked out...

KEN

I hugged her before she got into her car..

Kodessa: So you'll come?

Me: Yes

Kodessa: See you on Saturday

Me: Don't hold your breath too much with Kurai

Kodessa: I know

My phone vibrated. It was Musa..

Me: I have to take this, It's my girlfriend

Kodessa: You should bring her along

Me: I don't think so, Her mom passed on

Kodessa: Aww sad

Me: See you around

Kodessa: Bye Bro

I answered..

Me: I was going to call you, Just didn't know what to say. I'm not so good with words of comfort

Musa: Or you just were too busy

Me: Maybe

Musa: Gabi said she saw you with some girl

Me: She did

Musa: And?

Me: And what?

Musa: Something I should know? Apparently you guys were cosy

Me: Yes we were, Because she's my sister. Kodessa, Different Mothers same Dad. Haven't seen her in a while



Musa: Ohw

Me: If I was to cheat on you, Do you think I'll do it so openly that your best friend would know?

Musa: I'm sorry.. I just have a lot going through my mind

Me: I know.. When is the funeral?

Musa: This Saturday, Just not sure about the time

Me: Later on Saturday we have a family dinner by my Father's house. So I'll ask Kodessa to come early before the dinner, We'll come to the

funeral and you can meet her

Musa: Okay

Me: I'll call you later.. I love you

Musa: I love you too

I hung up whilst laughing and shaking my head..

KURAI

My sister Kodessa called me..

I rolled my eyes..

Me: Hi

Kodessa: Hi Sis

Me: Half sister

Kodessa: Hi anyway

Me: What do you want?

Kodessa: I just came from eating lunch with  
Ken

Me: Good for you

Kodessa: Dad's doing a family dinner on

Saturday. We wanted you to come

Me: Fuck you and Dad!

I hung up....

KEN

Me: Chaklas

Chak: Boss?

Me: Where does Gabi stay? She forgot her phone

Chak: Uyazi kubo Musa? (You know Musa's

place)

Me: Yaa

Chak: I think 4 to 5 houses from Musa's house

Me: Ayt.. Ta Ntwana

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

24

MUSA

It's no longer easy for me to cry, Unless I'm truly

broken. Even after Menzi slapped me, I didn't cry. My anger and hate towards him just multiplied..

I looked at my Aunt.. Menzi had told her what happened before leaving. The church people were gone now..

Me: Once upon a time I would defend myself, But it's no use. If you believe his version of the truth then it's okay. There's my truth, His truth, Khosi's truth and the actual version of the truth

Aunt: Kanti yini? Grace is not even that cold and you guys are fighting like this? Why did she leave so soon? Ngapha it's Pakiso and Thuli sleeping together as cousins. Ngapha wuwe no Menzi. Chaa I am left to face this? Hayi nami mangidose straight (let me die)

She took her black ntsu underground gang tobacco..

Me: I will go and dish up, So I can wash dishes after

I took Sedi's towel, Picked her up and went to the kitchen...

GABI

Ken started off in my ass, Proceeded to my coochie. My whole body was numb, I was in pain. The whole torture took 30min straight or so. I can't even estimate because to me it fell like a lifetime. When he was done, He untied me. I saw then that the bed was a mess. Blood

mixed with human waste, Not forgetting how bad it was smelling. I even threw up..

He instructed me to clean up, Spotless..

I was weak and even moving slow..

He told me that if I don't clean spotless, He was going to feed me to his dogs..

I don't know what kind of a beast he is, But he kept on chanting "Thou shalt not envy" whilst torturing me. He is sick!!

He even made me to put a cotton roll up my ass, Just so I don't keep messing up as I cleaned. He was clearly not out of the house, When I



walked to load the bedding in the machine in the bathroom, I saw smoke in the living room. The TV was also on..

I wonder how Musa will survive this Man,  
Because all these glitters are definitely not gold...

He showed up in the bathroom, I turned and saw him standing at the door.. I got scared.

Ken: I'm going to make a phone call outside,  
You welcome to leave and scream outside. I just don't know how you getting through to the neighbours. Good fences make good neighbours.. But

He walked closer.. I walked back..

Ken: If you behave, This will soon be over

He walked up to the door, Then stopped tapping the wall..

Ken: You not divorcing Musa as a friend, She's been through enough loss

He walked away..

MUSA

As I was busy dishing up. My phone vibrated. I took it, It was Ken..

Me: Hey

Ken: Hey?? Yini? We friends now?

Me: I'm not in a good mood

Ken: Understandable, With what you goi-

Me: I had a fight with my Brother. Actually an argument, He then slapped me

Ken: Pak?

Me: The other one.. Menzi

Ken: What?

Me: It's okay.. I am just tired of the fighting that's all, I'm glad he cut ties with us because I am done with him. He's heavily influenced by his wife. She lied on me, Menzi turned beast mode and attacked me

Ken: Family drama

Me: Can't wait for the funeral, So me and him can be finally done

Ken: I was actually watching a game, It was halftime. We back now.. I'll call you later

Me: Okay

Ken: I love you

Me: I love you too

We hung up...

GABI

I checked my legs. Blood had even dried up on me, And my feaces. I was struggling with the washing machine..

Ken showed up behind me, He smacked his hand on mine. He moves so silently like a snake..

He pressed the keys and the machine started..

He opened the shower door, Ran the water. He kept on checking..

Ken: In

He seemed upset, Was different from how he was before going outside. I walked in. He opened the top cabinet. Took out a shower gel and a face cloth. Threw them inside..

Ken: Make it quick

He took out the cotton roll, Some of it was still left..

Ken: Change your filth too!! In the meantime I'll

help clean the bedroom, I hope this time around we won't have a messy situation, If you actually engage we might end in your coochie only

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

23

KEN

When I parked by her house she was outside in the yard. I got out and called her out, She walked up to me..

Gabi: Hi

Me: Hey.. You forgot your phone at the Pub,  
Good we was sitting opposite you

Gabi: Ohh thank you so much. I thought I  
misplaced it la endlini

Me: Nex

She tried to take it from me, I retracted my hand  
back..

Me: Do you wanna go out for a ride?

Gabi: A ride?

Me: Yes please.. I wanna talk to you



Gabi: Ngani? (About what)

Me: You were right at what you said at the Pub. The thing is, I actually liked you before uMusa. I had asked her about you but naye she spoke bad about you, So instead of approaching you first, I went for her

Gabi: Ohh

Me: Just a quick meal so we can talk

She looked around..

Gabi: I don't know Ken, Musa is my friend

Me: I'll end it with her, Just not now because you know her Mom passed on and everything

Gabi: Yaa

Me: So what do you say? Just be for an hour

Gabi: Let me change

Me: No it's okay.. I'll buy you an outfit

She looked at me....

Me: Please

Gabi: Okay ke, But when we come back. Don't

drop me off at the gate. Neighbours like news, I don't want Musa knowing about this

Me: I understand

I went and opened the door for her. She got in and I closed it. I still had her phone..

MUSA

My Mother's church was here.. I was preparing tea for them and biscuits. Khosi came in..

Khosi: May I help?

Me: I'm almost done

Khosi: Look Musa, I understand how you feel. Honestly speaking your Brother has a brain of his own. I didn't do anything to him. Maybe one day you'll be in a relationship, I wish you find someone who will love you just as much, So that nawe they'll say you gave him a love potion

Me: It won't be, Because I'd never discourage him to abandon his family. I'd never alienate him

Khosi: You speaking about that incident

Me: Which one? There has been so many incidences I lost count. Or maybe that one where you told him that his Mother hates you, He drove all the way to swear at his own Mother.

Or when you told him that we accusing you of witchcraft? Which one was it?

Khosi: You guys did make me feel somehow though

Me: Do me a favour.. Stay away from me so long you'll be here.. Thank you

GABI

We were just randomly talking and drove up to midrand. He slowed down at some house..

Me: I thought we were going to eat?

Ken: We are

Me: This is your house?

Ken: Yes

The gate opened, He drove in. I saw 3 dogs running..

Me: I'm scared of Dogs

Ken: That's good

The gate closed..

He got out, The dogs surrounded him. He came to open for me..

Ken: They won't bite you when you with me,  
They trained

I got out scared and closed the door. I held his  
hand, We walked to the door.. He took out his  
keys and unlocked..

We got in.. His house was beautiful. He locked..

Me: Your house is beautiful

Ken: I know

He went to the security panel, Punched in a few  
numbers..

Me: It really is

He looked at me..

Ken: Do you know what I hate about envy?

Me: What?

Ken: When your best friend has a boyfriend, And you think she's scored or found herself Mr perfect. Not entirely knowing what lies behind the closed curtain. Today you will see

I looked at him, And he looked serious. I tried to run to the door, He grabbed me. Grabbed me kicking and screaming to his bedroom..



He threw me down and locked..

Ken: This is the only place I love in the house,  
My room. It's sound proof. You will scream all  
you want, No one will hear. I pimped it out  
because I live with my little sister, So she never  
knows what goes down in my bedroom. Don't  
worry, She's not here. She's on a holiday with  
friends coming back in two days time

MUSA

Menzi grabbed my arm and pulled me outside..

Menzi: What the hell is wrong with you?

Me: Askies?

He slapped me..

Menzi: I've been so wanting to do this for a long time now, Finally did!.. What did you say to Khosi? She's in the car upset. You accused her of witchcraft and told her that Mom died because of her? That she got to mom?

Me: I never said that!!

Menzi: You are a nightmare!! Another part of me is happy that uMa ufokofile! (She's dead) we'll see how you get through, Her golden price possession

He spat on me..

Menzi: You disgust me!!

GABI

I knew that I was in shit..

Me: Ken please (crying)

He had stripped me naked and cuffed both my hands to the bed. He had tied me on my tummy..

I turned my head to him standing by the dressing table. He gulped down the water that had some powder in it..

I was shivering, My heart beating fast..

Ken: I like nosey best friends, Because the next thing you'll be bringing us unnecessary witchcraft

He was taking off his clothes. He picked up the condom and unwrapped it. He stroked his dick until he was hard enough. My biggest question was, How the hell is he getting aroused when he clearly see my tears and seeing me shivering. He put the condom on, It fit tightly around his dick. He then came straight to the bed, Behind me.

I forced closing my legs..

Ken: If I were to tie them, I'll stretch them so far

apart they going to break

Me: Please no (Crying)

He forcefully opened them, I felt it at the entrance of my vagina. It went up to my anus..

Me: God please no (Crying)

He shoved it deep inside, It even stuck halfway. He pushed it in hard and harder. I let out the most hardest scream feeling my asshole tearing up. When it was deep enough, I lost my breath. I don't think one would understand the amount of pain that I felt at that moment. He pressed me down against the bed by my waist and really went for it. Moaning in the process while I cried and begged for my life..

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

25

MUSA

The next morning, I woke up early. I couldn't wash the dishes last night so I woke up early to clean with the help of uThuli. My other Aunt, Showed up in the morning. It's Grace (My Mom), Veronica (Eldest Aunt) and their cousin Sister Jacobeth..

As Veronica went to fix the situation with the funeral parlour, Submitting documents etc Zara

sent on the mattress..

I got a call from Thandeka..

Her: How is it going?

Me: It's hard but, It's life what can we do?

Her: Please Sms me your account, We contributed something for you. We will come Friday before the funeral

Me: You guys shouldn't have

Her: It's not much but.. You a part of us, Part of the family at work. It's tradition

Me: Thank you so much, I appreciate it

Her: You welcome. We'll see you on Friday, Also on Monday when you come back

Me: No problem.. Thank you so much

I hung up and sent her an Sms of my account number..

GABI

He came back into the car..

Ken: Here's R2 000 The painkillers, Cream and



everything I got from the pharmacy

I took them without saying anything..

Ken: I don't need to tell you how this is going to go down

He had made me take a bath this morning before we left. Also made sure to use a condom. What also cripples me is the fact that his maid came back today from her leave. She didn't ask nothing, She was told to clean everything. Makes me wonder how dangerous is Ken, To actually have people close to him understand the monster he is.

Ken: You still going to be friends with Musa, You are going to continue with your life like

nothing happened. If you wanna press charges you can, But I don't need to tell you how it's going to go down

He put his hand on my thigh and squeezed it..

Ken: Especially not when both your kids live with their father, You can continue being a Mother to them or Bury them

I looked at him..

Me: How did you know about my kids?

Ken: I know everything, Trust me

He handed me my phone..

Ken: Take the first cab home.. I stored my number, I'll be in touch for.. Let's say R1500 every month

He moved his hand from my thigh...

I got out of the car..

Ken: Text me when you get home, I mean it

I closed the door and headed straight to the taxi rank without looking back. Fighting back tears. I was wearing his sister's clothes...

MUSA

I looked at Lesedi. She cried when I put her down, Her foot was swollen since I dropped her..

Me: I think I need to take her to the clinic

My other cousin, Zara's Daughter was here.

Mbali: I don't think so. They'll wanna hear how this happened, Any case of negligence they might report you. Try a Dr

Thandeka did send me the money. It was R3 000.. I'll give my Aunt R2000

Me: Let me bath her

Thandeka: Say she was playing and hurt herself,

She fell

Me: Thank you.. I'll say that

KEN

I was driving back home.. In the middle of my driving. I kept on having flashbacks..

The one that showed up the most, Was when I was around 9. My mother used to sexually abuse me too. Especially when she was high. She would give me a bj, Poke her finger deep in my ass or make me eat her coochie up. I have never told anyone about that, Not even Kurai..

I grabbed on tightly to the wheel. I'm 37 years

old now and those memories still mess me up like it was something that happened yesterday..

GABI

I arrived at home, And my Mother was waiting for me in the kitchen. She did not look happy..

Mom: Ubuyaphi Gabi? (Where have you been?)

Me: I.. I went somewhere, Stayed up and forgot to call you

Mom: Since when do you leave without saying? Do you wanna bring in a 3rd child? Naye must the child be raised by their father?

Me: Chaa (No)

Mom: Yekani ufeba Gabi, Look at you. You look like you hardly even slept, Wearing different clothes. When are you going to actually fix your life? Jonga even your own Sister found your best friend a job and not you. Shouldn't that tell you how useless you are mara? You bring me forth nothing but problems. Uhamba nini?  
(When are you leaving)

Me: Sorry Ma

Mom: Even these men do nothing for you than give you babies. You are a true disappointment. Isichitho!, Isiqalekiso nje kphela (You are a curse to me)

Me: Sorry

Mom: Haisuka maan!!

I went straight to my bedroom..

.

To be continued

This was supposed to be yesterday's bonus

THE NARCISSIST

26

MUSA

My Mother was laid to rest beautifully. My



Aunt's funeral cover sure came through, To bury my Mother with dignity.. The whole week I was okay, But on the funeral day. Her coffin confirmed that she was indeed gone.

It was a Sunday and we were cleaning whilst washing the blankets too. Most of our relatives left yesterday after the funeral, My Aunt was just about to leave..

Vero: Are you sure you want to move into her bedroom before the cleansing?

Me: It'll give me time to get used to the fact that she's gone, Not seeing her everyday will help me a lot. Help me to process everything

Vero: Understandable. We need to do budget

and do a cleansing after 3 months

Me: We will, I'll also budget

Vero: I doubt Menzi will contribute

Me: True

The taxi stopped..

Vero: Look after your Mom's house, We trust you now since she's gone

Me: I will

She hugged me and Sedi..

Vero: Don't forget to get the blankets when they dry

Me: I won't

We waited for her to get into the taxi, Then we waved goodbye and walked back home.

At the gate, Gabi was standing there..

KEN

Me: The family dinner was supposed to be last night, Dad cancelled it to tonight. It'll be nice to attend

Kurai: No

Me: Kodessa wants to see you

Kurai: I don't care about her, Kodessa had the best life she had a Dad. When Kodessa was born, Dad was already having an affair with her Mother, Then left us and went to marry her. Creating a picture perfect family, Totally forgetting about us

Me: It's not her fault that she had a different upbringing. We had a shitty one because of Mom's choices!. Dad tried

Kurai: Dad tried nothing!

Me: Mom was dating a dangerous man, A man who was feared!

Kurai: You don't even go to see Mom, Yet you here preaching about me seeing Dad

Me: Wait a minute.. Do you visit Mom?

She kept quiet..

Me: Kurai!!!

Kurai: Yes

Me: Are you serious? You choosing someone who killed our childhood over someone who is a good parent

Kurai: You only saying that because Dad gave you money to start a business, What has he done for me?

Me: He wanted to take you to school, But you don't want. I feel betrayed by my own sister, Choosing an enemy

Kurai: She's still our Mom and she's sorry

Me: She's manipulating you!! That bitch will never change even if Jesus was looking her in the eye.. You know what, You need to choose. Mom or Us

Kurai: Fine.. Fine!! I'll go to the stupid dinner but don't force me to be happy about it!!

Me: Good!!

Kurai: Fine!!! We'll go and kiss ass

I raised my hand up, She protected herself. I lowered my hand..

Me: One day.. Just one day, I promise you!

I pushed her out of my way..

Me: You go see Mom again, Maybe move in with her in the centre

MUSA

Me: Hey

Gabi: Hi

I went and hugged her..

Me: I.. After what happened I didn't think I was going to see you again

Gabi: I understand.. You weren't in your right mind

Me: Are you okay? You look like you haven't slept in a while



Gabi: Ya I.. I went out last night

Me: Ohw

Gabi: Sorry I didn't come to the funeral

Me: It's okay.. I'm just glad that you came, Let's go inside

We went inside. Something was definitely wrong with Gabi. She looked flushed and tired, Not her usual self..

Me: Do you want something to eat?

Gabi: No thank you.. Maybe something to drink

Me: Juice or Cool drink?

Gabi: Something stronger

Me: I have Sminorff 1818

Gabi: It'll do

Me: One bottle was left yesterday, After tears

I went to fetch it..

I took out two glasses..

Me: Mix it?

Gabi: I'll have it raw

I poured..

Me: So that day, It was his step sister

Gabi: I see.. I'm sorry for thinking the worst

Me: You were looking out for me, He asked me to go with him to his father's house. Some family dinner I don't know, My mom just got buried

Gabi: You should go, You know get some fresh air

Me: Don't you think it's too soon?

Gabi: You did mourn for the whole week until the funeral

Me: Yeah, Fresh air will do

Her phone vibrated... She checked..

Gabi: I have to take this

Me: No problem

She stood up and walked outside..

I looked at her glass, She had gulped everything

down..

GABI

I coughed and then answered..

Me: Hello

Ken: What are you doing?

Me: I'm with Musa

Ken: That's good

Me: May I help you with something?

Ken: I wanted to see you before the family dinner

Me: I don't think so

Ken: Askies?

Me: I don't want nothing to do with you Ken, I'm quiet about everything trying to get my life back on track.. Please leave me alone

Ken: It's not how it works

Me: It's how it works for me

Ken: You gonna go to the pub, I'll be there in an hour or so

He hung up..

Me: Fuck!!

I went back..

I took the bottle on the table and drank..

Musa: Slow down.. What's wrong?

I put it down again..

Me: I fucked up my life

Musa: How? What's going on Gabi

I wiped my tears..

Musa: Talk to me, I can help

I shook my head..

Me: You can't help me, No one can

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

26

MUSA



Gabi left about an hour ago. I took the blankets from the washing line and put them inside. I then started moving some of my things to my Mother's room..

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: I'm coming

I went to the door, It was already open..

Me: Good day

A gentleman stood there..

Him: Delivery for Ms Musa

Me: It's Me

He handed me the two bags and the flowers..

Him: Please sign here

I signed...

I took everything to my Mother's room. I checked the shopping bags. I saw a card and it read:

"For the two beautiful ladies, Who agreed to my dinner request. I hope everything fits

Love

Ken"

I checked. It was an outfit for me and Lesedi...

Me: Look Sedi..

I do hope everything fits. The flowers were accompanied by a perfume and a box of chocolates..

Me: Wow.. Looks like we going to have fun

Ken actually considering my Daughter, Makes me to love him more..

GABI

I followed him to his office when he came in.

We walked in, He closed the door and locked it.  
My heart skipped a beat, Fear crept in..

Ken: Don't worry.. People who work for me are  
loyal to the core

Me: What am I doing here?

He went to his drawer. Took out an envelope.  
He came to me..

Ken: For your loyalty.. R3 000

I looked at the envelope..

Me: No thank you

Ken: You might wanna take it

Me: No I won't

Ken: Huh?

Me: R3000 won't fix anything, I.. I even had to break up with my boyfriend because I can't let him touch me anymore. Matter of fact, I hate Men as a whole

Ken: That's a bit drastic don't you think?  
Dumping your boyfriend

Me: Do you understand what I'm saying Ken?

Ken: We have a perfectly good sexual  
relationship going on, Dumping partners is not  
necessary

Me: We have nothing Ken!!! (Shouting)

I took a deep breath..

Me: We have nothing, There's no sexual  
relationship. There's nothing!

Ken: I'm giving you a financial beneficial

stability, I know our first encounter was a bit traumatizing but this is a good relationship

Me: Ken!!! (Shouting)

Ken: The last time I checked, You had a thing for me. Almost went as far as removing Musa from the situation

Me: That was.. I am not there anymore

Ken: I am still there

He walked up to me and wrapped his hands around my waist. He kissed me. This was the first time he kissed me, The last time we were at it. He just went for it, No form of any

romantic stimulation..

I pushed him away..

He took the envelope again..

Ken: This can go the easy way or the hard way

I took the envelope..

Ken: I will see you sometime next week

I walked to the door..

Ken: Your phone has to always be on, You can only miss my calls when you dying or at least



dead

I unlocked and walked out..

MUSA

I fitted the clothes and they did fit. A skinny jeans, Shirt, And heels. Sedi's clothes the shoes were a bit big..

Ken really made my day, I do hope his Father is not difficult. I don't like awkward situations..

Thuli showed up..

Thuli: Hey

Me: Hey

Thuli: Nice clothes

Me: Thank you

Thuli: When did you go to buy them?

Me: Actually K.. I went this morning, Needed some fresh air

Thuli: What's the occasion?

Me: Nothing.. Sedi and I we going out tonight that's all, For fresh air

Thuli: Okay.. Enjoy

She walked out..

GABI

I got home and gave my Mother the envelope..  
She was reading her bible..

Mom: And then?

Me: I have a new boyfriend. This is his token of appreciation so next time when I see him you won't make a fuss about me not contributing

Mom: How much?

Me: R3000

She smiled.. She took it

Mom: If you stick with him, Then he might marry you. At least you'll be good for something since you dropped out in gread 10

Me: I'm happy that you happy

She stood up and hugged me..

Mom: Finally we'll have a white wedding, This hood won't see us coming. My certified hoe daughter getting married, They won't see it

coming

She took out R500..

Mom: For you.. Tomorrow I'm going to do grocery shopping

Me: Okay.. I'll be in my room

KEN

I looked at the monitor. My phone beeped.

It was Musa thanking me with a text, Gabi's text followed right after hers..

Gabi: "Okay we have a deal"

I smiled and took my glass of whiskey to drink from it..

Me: Checkmate. A girlfriend and a hoe on the side, Works perfectly

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

27

MUSA

Ken came to fetch us, He looked handsome.

Ken: You guys look pretty

Me: Thank you

He helped me with the bags..

Me: This is Lesedi, My daughter

Ken: She's pretty

Me: Thank you

I spotted Gabi, She saw us..

Me: Hey Gabz

She walked up to us, She had bread with her..

Gabi: Hey.. Looking pretty

Me: Thank you, We going out. I was going to ask you to look after Lesedi but figured we'd come back late and didn't wanna burden you

Gabi: It's no burden, You know I love Sedi

Ken: Hi Gabi

Gabi: Hi Ken.. Let me not hold you up

Me: See you tomorrow when I come back from



work, Because I need to talk to you. May you please look after Sedi for me just until I can find a good daycare for her

Gabi: No problem

Ken: Let's go guys

Gabi: Bye

Me: Bye

We got in...

Me: She seems a bit off, I'm worried about her

He kissed me on my cheek..

Ken: Why you say so?

Me: I don't know, It's like something is bothering her

Ken: Did you try and talk to her?

Me: Yeah.. She said she's fine

Ken: I see

GABI

Me: Here's the bread

Evelyn: Thank you

Me: I'll start on the salad

Evelyn: What's going on with you?

Me: I'm sorry?

Evelyn: You not yourself

Me: I am myself

Evelyn: What's wrong?

Me: Mom at it again

Evelyn: You should start ignoring her, She's always been like this. You know, I just learn to ignore her. If it wasn't for you, I would've gotten a room to rent

Me: You should

Evelyn: I'm not leaving you here alone with Mom

Me: We'll figure something out soon

MUSA

We got to his Father's house. Seems like Ken's family is successful...

The door opened, We were welcomed in by some girl..

Her: Hi Bro

Ken: Baby Sis

He hugged her and kissed her on her cheek..

Ken: This is Kodessa, My little Sister. Kodessa this is Musa and Lesedi

Me: Hey

Ko: Hi.. You look lovely

Me: You too

Ko: Please come in

We made our way in..

Ken: Where's Dad?

Ko: In the lounge

Ken: Something smells good

Ko: Yeap dinner prepared by me.. This side

We walked to the living room..

Ken: Dad

His father turned and looked at us..

Him: Son

Ken is the spitting image of his father..

Ken: Meet my Dad, Daniel

Me: Sir

Ken: This is Musa my girlfriend and her  
Daughter, Lesedi

Daniel: Hello Little Ms pretty

Sedi kept quiet..

Me: Sorry, She's struggling a bit

Daniel: How old is she?

Me: 3

Daniel: Did you have her checked?

Me: Last time, The Dr said there's nothing wrong with her

Daniel: Traditional? Checked traditionally?  
Could be culture related, Kodessa was also a bit



slow had to do certain things culturally

Me: Never thought of that

Daniel: His Dad?

Me: Not in our lives

Daniel: Go have her checked

Me: I will Sir.. Thank you

Ko: Sit down guys.. Where is Kurai?

Ken: She didn't wanna come

Daniel: How is she holding up?

Ken: She's Kurai

Daniel: I do hope one day she will get over it

Ken: She will

GABI

Evelyn: Why did you dumb Patrick?

Me: It wasn't working out anymore

Mom: She found someone better

Evelyn: Really? Who is it?

Me: Uhm it's still early to tell

Mom: He gave her 3k

Evelyn: Wow.. You trust him?

Me: I..

Evelyn: Guys who do that are questionable

Mom: You are questionable yourself Evelyn,  
Jealous of your Sister

Evelyn: I'm not jealous

Mom: Meanwhile you running around with a guy who is working at Tekkie Town , Bringing nothing but pennies. Can't even afford himself, He always got on the same damn sneakers

Me: Ma

Mom: What?? It's the truth

Evelyn shook her head...

MUSA

Me: The food is delicious Kodessa

Ko: Thank you.. Heard about your Mother, I'm sorry

Me: It's okay

Daniel: I think Musa is the first realistic girl you've ever dated

Ko: I agree

Ken: I agree too

He place his hand on my thigh...

Ken: Might be hearing wedding bells soon

I looked at him..

Ko: I can't wait

Daniel: I'm proud of you Son, Especially after what your Mo-

Ken: You mean after Mom passed on

Daniel: Yes.. After she passed on

Me: I'm sure she's proud where she is

Ken: Yeah

We continued eating..

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

28

MUSA

He drove us back to the house after dinner, It was late. The dinner was so fun that we had lost track of time. Sedi was even sleeping..

Me: I had fun.. Your family is so sweet and welcoming

Ken: Wait until you meet the other Sister

Me: Look Ken, I know that our relationship is moving kind of slow. Just that my Mother passing, I didn't expect that

Ken: It's not like we have been dating for years now, I like slow. Gives us more time to know each other. Getting to know each other's lives and families better

Me: Yaa mine isn't that perfect

Ken: No family is perfect, With mine. We just have the money which makes us seem perfect

Me: But they nice



Ken: They are.. With regards to Sedi and Gabi,  
Are you sure you can trust Gabi with babysitting?  
Especially since you said she's not herself

Me: It's her Mother I'm worried about, She's very  
nasty

Ken: And you trust them?

Me: I have no choice for now

Ken: My maid has been working for me, For  
years now. She was a baby sitter, Her first job.  
She also helped take care of Kurai. If you agree,  
She can babysit Sedi. She's originally from Zim,  
Very humble and kind.

Me: I don't know Ken

Ken: You'd rather have Gabi and her Nasty Mother do it? Plus you won't have to pay Aneni, I will pay her extra R500 for babysitting

Me: Ken

He held my hand..

Ken: Do you trust me?

Me: I do

Ken: I am 37, I am not into just dating anymore. I love fell in love with you from the very first time I saw you, I am looking for something

stable. Something that's going to last,  
Something marriage. If our relationship takes  
us there, Lesedi is going to be a part of us.  
She's going to be my responsibility too, Our first  
child. I've raised Kurai so I do have a little  
experience

I chuckled..

Ken: Call it a trial run, If you don't like it then we  
can can consider daycare. Since you mentioned  
though that she's a bit slow for her age, Day  
care they might treat her someone too. At least  
when she's able to talk even a little, And we  
should consider what my Dad said

I exhaled..

Me: Okay let's try it and see

Ken: Meaning every morning I'll fetch you guys,  
We drop her off then I drop you off at work.  
Fetch you then we fetch her

Me: Okay let's do it

Ken: Let's do it

GABI

I hardly sleep these days since my experience with Ken. I carry this heavy load in my heart, Also the guilt I feel when Musa finds out. The day she finds out, Because the truth eventually comes out..

My Sister walked into the kitchen. I was drinking tea, It was still early in the morning.

Evelyn: Rough night?

Me: Yes

Evelyn: Heard you last night, You were struggling to sleep had nightmares. Two days now straight

Me: It's been a rough time for me. Breaking up with my boyfriend and life

Evelyn: Don't be hard on yourself

Me: I'll try.. I'll make us some soft porridge as you get ready for work

Evelyn: Okay Sis.. Thank you

MUSA

This is the first time Lesedi will be babysit by someone else other than my Mom. This Aneni lady came off as a good person and trusted. She speaks English and if she's a good babysitter, She'll help Lesedi with her speech and teach her English..

Aneni: Hello Ms Sedi, She is so adorable. My very first job when I was 18, was babysitting. I also used to be an Au pair back in overseas before coming to South Africa

Me: Wow.. That's impressive, For how long?

Aneni: From when I was 18-35, Then came back to South Africa. Been a maid ever since, I'm 42 now

Me: Kids of your own?

Aneni: Yes.. I have two back home, Then my first born is here. She's a maid too and has two kids

Me: That's nice

I put Lesedi down....

Me: She might give you some trouble, She was mostly used to my Mother

Aneni: I don't mind a few tantrums

Ken: Musa has given me a list, I'll buy her things and come back with them

Aneni: Please include a drawing book, Some colourful paints, Sheets, Crayons. The crayons she'll use them under supervision, She'll get time to watch Cocomelon and then paint. It'll help her greatly with her speech

Me: Wow didn't think of that

Ken: Let me take you to work, So I can buy the



things

I hugged and kissed Lesedi, She cried for me as she walked me out to the car..

Aneni: Aww it's okay baby

I got into the car feeling nervous about this, But I have no choice. I have to work so we can eat.. I have exchanged numbers with Aneni, I'll be calling her..

BARBIE (KEN'S EX)

I looked at it, I was pregnant. I haven't been with anyone else since Ken. I've just been busy with my content to generate myself some money

and get back to the game.

I've taken 3 pregnancy tests and they all came back positive..

Me: Shiiiiit!!!

MUSA

Me: Aneni seems nice

Ken: She is and trustworthy, Sorry you didn't meet Kurai officially. She wakes up at 10:00am or even 13:00

Me: It's okay.. So last night I was on the Internet, Checked a few courses at Unisa that I can do

Ken: You wanna study?

Me: Yes.. Unisa is good, Distant learning

Ken: Do you think you will handle such a huge responsibility? Lesedi, Work and Studying?

Me: I will have too.. I don't wanna be a Cashier at pnp for the rest of my life. Lesedi is growing, Mom is no longer around. I need to pull up my socks

Ken: Seems like you have your whole future planned, Do I have any space there?

Me: Of course you do

Ken: I'm just wondering because our relationship wasn't counted there

Me: Uhm, I didn't think I needed to count it because no doubt it's there

Ken: I was just asking

Me: Do you have a problem with me wanting to study?

Ken: No.. I have a problem with you not taking our relationship as a priority. I already told my family that I do wanna marry you. I don't know how long the course is going to take, That will mean patience on my side. Then you actually graduate. Another excuse will come. I don't

wanna get married soon and have more kids I'm still settling into my career

Me: What are you saying Ken? If we gonna have a future I want one too my own individual independence

Ken: I'm already making enough money, Will be making more as I extend my businesses. You don't have to work, I'll take care of all the finances

Me: So you don't want me to be independent?

He kept quiet..

Me: Tell me now before it becomes a problem,

If my going back to school is going to be a problem, Then we end this now?

He laughed..

Ken: When did we get to "This" now we are "This?" you haven't even registered yet and already we are "This"

Me: You being unreasonable now

Ken: Am I?

Me: unreasonable and very unnecessary! This argument is unnecessary!

Ken: Who's arguing? I am just communicating

my feelings to you, I didn't think it was going to be a problem. So what? If I don't like something I must keep quiet?

I took out my earphones and put them on..

Ken: I'm still talking to you

I played music from my phone..

Ken: Musa??

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

MUSA

The whole day at work I was uneasy, Since the fight I had with Ken this morning. My spirit was unsettled. On the other part, Constantly calling Aneni to check up on Sedi brightened my mood a lot..

Thandeka: You absent minded today

Me: I know.. Just not feeling too well

Thandeka: Could it be that you came to work too early? I mean you just buried your Mom last Saturday



Me: Maybe, But sitting at home and doing nothing is going to drive me more crazy

Thandeka: Understandable, I'm sorry again

Me: Thank you

KEN

I stood at the door, She was standing by the window. I thought of turning and walking away, Why was I even here?

Mom: Kenzo

She turned and looked at me..

She walked over and sat on her chair..

Me: How did you know it was Me?

Mom: I didn't. I just felt a presence behind me,  
And I've long been anticipating you coming.  
Called out your name and to my surprise it is  
you indeed.. Please come in

I walked in and looked around. The whole room  
was white, Pure white..

Mom: Every room here is like this, Beautiful  
colour. Helps with depressing moods. It's a very  
good place here, Quiet, And calming. I always  
wanted to thank you for this, You never miss a  
payment every month. Sometimes you pay in

advance

Me: Why?

She looked at me..

Me: Why did you do all those things? Why the abuse? Why you let him abuse us too?

Mom: I admit.. I wasn't a good Mother, And then the addiction happened

Me: No.. No.. No.. We not about to do that, We not about to blame the addiction, Because if we do. Then it'll be an excuse to make it seem right, To excuse your behaviour

Mom: I never said I am making an excuse with my addiction

Me: You are.. If you didn't, You wouldn't have brought it up

Mom: Kenzo I am not

Me: You are!!! For once take responsibility

Mom: I am taking responsibility!!

Me: No you not!! If you were and if the addiction was actually making you act that way, Then you should've gotten clean!

Mom: I tried

Me: You didn't!! Worse Kurai and I weren't even motivation enough for you to stay clean

Mom: I was addicted to drugs!!, Not alcohol, Not cigarettes. Drugs!!!!!!

Me: That's not an excuse

Mom: You don't even wanna hear me out

Me: Because you'll be doing nothing but dilly dally around the situation and make excuses

Mom: Okay.. If my explanation is not good enough, May I also ask you something

Me: Go ahead

Mom: Why are you here? If you hate me this much why did you come here? I've been here for years not even once you came. Why today?

I sighed..

Me: Because I had hope that you could be dead

Mom: No.. Something happened

I kept quiet..

Mom: You hating me, That's okay. It's justifiable, But you hating every woman because of me now that's not justifiable

Me: What are you talking about?

Mom: Kurai told me about your unstable relationships Kenzo and the Dr said it that it won't be rare for you to hate women

Me: Are you fucken kidding me? You psycho analysing me? When you the most shitty person in the world?

Mom: I do hope that one day you'll find it in your heart to forgive me and let it go

Me: Fuck you Mom!

I walked out...

GABI

Me: You coming here won't change the fact that you and I we done

Him: I don't have closure, Because I don't know what happened. I don't understand what happened. I thought our relationship was good. I didn't do anything, I didn't even cheat

Me: I told you, I found someone else. Fell for someone else

Him: Who? For how long has this person been around for? You were cheating on me?



I bit my tongue a little..

Me: Yes

Him: Wtf Gabi? Why?

My ex was busy interrogating me about our breakup..

Him: Considering how much I've loved you, And still do. This is how you repay me?

Me: I'm sorry.. I'm very sorry

He lifted up his t-shirt and wiped his tears..

Me: I'm sorry.. I'm very sorry

Him: Did you even love me?

I cleared my throat..

Me: I did love you. I'm sorry for everything

Him: Whoever that is, I hope he breaks your heart the same way that you breaking mine right now.. Get out of my car

I got out of his car...

MUSA

Thandeka: Did you check that you locked well?

Me: Yes

Thandeka: I'll see you tomorrow

Me: Tomorrow it is

Ken was already parked. I walked up to the car,  
He got out and went to open for me on the  
other side..

I got in, He did too..

He started driving..

Ken: What kind of condoms do you feel most comfortable with?

Me: Huh?

Ken: Condoms? Which ones do you feel most comfortable with?

Me: I.. I don't know

Ken: Okay, I have a few that you going to choose from at home

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

30

MUSA

Aneni left when we got there, Sedi was passed out in the lounge on the couch, The TV was on..

Ken went to check his sister the one he lives with, She was not around..

He walked into the bedroom and closed the door, Locking it too..

Ken: You should consider yourself lucky on one thing, And that is. I don't hit women, Never have and never will

He walked up to me..

Ken: But there's one thing I do, And that is we talk

He unbuttoned my shirt..

Me: Ken sex is not going to fix our argument that we had earlier on

He unbuttoned it all the way down..

Me: Ken!!

He grabbed my shirt tightly..

Ken: Stop it!!

I looked at him and he was serious..

He dropped my shirt to the floor, Not that I didn't wanna do it but I was still a bit pissed about this morning. He kissed me, And I kissed him too. He squeezed me on my waist tight, I gasped breaking the kiss. We went back to kissing with my hand at the back of his head.. He picked me up, I wrapped my legs around. Pinned me straight again the wall, Both my hands around his neck. Balancing myself so I don't fall..

Ken: You are not going to school

Me: I am

He moved back a bit still carrying me, Then pinned me against the wall again. This time harder than the first time, I hit the back of my head against the wall.. Not too hard to cause a concussion

Me: Ken!!

Ken: You not going to school

Me: I am

Ken: We can do this all night baby, I have the energy

I kissed him again....



Me: So do I

GABI

I took my bottles of perfume and hit them against the wall. They broke. I took scissors and cut my clothes, All the clothes that my ex bought me. Everything that he has ever bought me, I destroyed it.. Each time when Ken popped into my head, I would destroy and break everything. Each time my Ex boyfriend's face popped up in my head, His tears falling. I'd cut my clothes with a scissor..

Me: I hate you Ken!!.. Son of a bitch!!

I saw the door opening, Evelyn walked in..

Evelyn: Gabi!!!

Me: I hate him.. I hate him.. I hate him!!

Evelyn: What is??? Gabi what are you doing?

Me: I hate him with all my heart (crying)

She dropped her bag on the floor and came to me, Hugging me..

Me: I hate him!! I wish that he could die (crying)

Evelyn: It's okay Mntaka Ma..

MUSA

We were butt naked now, Totally naked. He kissed my thigh, Going up to my coochie. Opening my legs a little. He muffed me, I opened up my legs more and pinned him hard against me.. He really went for it, That my legs started trembling..

Me: Keeeeen...

He ran his hands up and down my thighs, Then when I forced to close my legs. He pinned them against the door so I couldn't move them..

I was moaning a bit louder than when he first started, Especially his tongue playing around there. Moving from my clit, Down to my hole.

Inserting the tip of it in and out..

Me: Kenzo I'm going to come....

He stopped and came back up, Smashing his lips against mine. I went down kissing his neck all the way down to his already erected dick. I grabbed it and inserted it straight into my mouth. He bit his lower lip and leaned over putting his hand against the door. I gave him a BJ, Whilst looking at him. With his other hand, He squeezed my cheeks and literally brought himself in and out, Fucking me in my mouth. Pressing it in further, Felt it deep touching my throat. I gagged, Tears formed in my eyes. I pushed him back to catch a breather. He brought me up to him and kissed me. Then turned me around, Spanking my butt hard..

He grabbed my hands, Pinned them at the door.  
Stood closer behind me.. He kissed me on my  
cheek, Gently sucking it and moving closer to  
my ear..

Ken: You are not going to school (whispering)

Me: I am

He banged my hands against the wall..

Me: Awww!!

Ken: I am the man in this relationship, And you  
gonna start respecting my word

His hand squeezed my butt, He then inserted

his finger deep in my coochie.. Without any warning

Me: Ouchhhh!!

Ken: For someone with a kid, You much tighter than I thought. Would make sense because you haven't had a cock in a while

She shoved in another finger...

Me: Kenzooo!!!

Ken: I have another one at stake, All 4 can go in baby hoping you'll handle them all

I tried moving my hands but I couldn't..

Ken: Let's rehearse this.. "I'm not going to school"

I kept quiet. He drew them out and inserted them back in..

Ken: If I take them out again, I'm going back in with 3

He was still whispering in my ear..

Me: Fine.. Fine, I'm not going back

Ken: I didn't hear that

He gently finger fucked me..

Me: I'm not going school.. Dammit, I'm not going school!!

Ken: Good girl

KURAI

The door opened before I could even ring the bell. It was kodessa who opened..

We looked at each other for a while..

Kodessa: Kurai?



Me: Hey

Kodessa: I.. From the monitor when I pressed to open the gate, I didn't believe it was you

Me: It is

She hugged me..

Kodessa: I've been wishing this day would come,  
And it did

I hugged her too..

Kodessa: Welcome home

MUSA

I looked at his dick going in and out of my coochie, In a few I could see it getting wet. I wasn't only seeing the wetness anymore but could hear the sound..

I had my hand against his Abs. Another hand I was balancing it on the dressing table that I was sitting on..

He moved in closer and pushed it far in. I pushed him off a little..

Me: Ahhh

Ken: For someone with a loud mouth, Don't tell

me you can't take a dick

He kissed me and moaned against my lips.

Ken: But you are nice

He kissed me again..

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

31

MUSA

I woke up and got out of bed. I checked the

curtains, It was dark outside. I was still naked, I checked my thighs. Some of his cum had dried out in between my thighs. The last round, The moment we finished. I just passed out..

I went to the bathroom and grabbed a towel. I covered myself. I was very exhausted, I got out and heard Sedi's voice in the living room. I quickly made my way there. I stood at the doorway. Ken was helping Sedi create handprints on a white sheet, Using the paints. She was happy, Talking a lot of gibberish, Clapping and jumping up and down..

Me: How did you do that?

Ken looked at me..

Ken: Do what?

Me: How did you get her to talk?

Ken: Eeerr.. I didn't, You were passed out and she woke up, Thought we'd keep busy so we don't disturb you

He got up from the couch. I walked up to him and kissed him..

Ken: I didn't do nothing.. I swear, I can't even comprehend half of what she's saying

Me: No it's a good thing

Ken: It is?

Me: Sedi has never said a word. Gibberish or not, She's just never said anything and I've never seen her this happy before

Ken: I don't know.. Apart from what my Dad said, Maybe there's really nothing wrong with her. Child psychology does also state that kids can undergo stress and trauma which delays them in some parts of their lives, Maybe the home environment wasn't good

Me: Ohw

Ken: Or Maybe Dad was right

Me: No.. Just that I did imagine you to be someone who would have interest in knowing

about kids

Ken: What can I say

He looked at me..

Me: What?

Ken: Let me pick the kid first, They make good shields

He picked up Lesedi, Who just wanted to paint..

Me: Apart from coming inside of me what did you do?

Ken: You didn't check yourself in the mirror?

Me: No.. Why?

I went to the bathroom and checked..

Me: Ohh my.. Are you in insane?? (shouting)

I had a lot of love bites around my neck.

I went back to the lounge..

Me: Are you crazy? How the hell am I going to explain this at work tomorrow?

I walked up closer to him, He stepped back.



Ken: Child psychology also states that shouting infr-

Me: Shut up about child psychology Ken are you mental? How the hell am I going to explain this at work tomorrow??

Ken: Well.. It's not that bad

Me: It's not that bad?? It's ridiculous!! (shouting)

He looked at Lesedi..

Ken: You just scared the child

Me: What?

Ken: You scared the kid, Come here

Me: Don't use Lesedi on this

Ken: No come here.. For real

I walked up to them..

Ken: Try and take her

I tried, Lesedi didn't want..

Ken: I think I know what's wrong with her

Me: Don't be using Lesedi as an es-

Ken: Musa shut up for a second

I looked at him..

Ken: I meant vala volume kancance (Don't be too loud)

Voice: He's right.. Shouting traumatized me as a child, I still get scared when someone shouts at me

I turned around, It was Kurai..

Ken: Hey you

Kurai: Hey

Me: Hi

Kurai: Musa right?

Me: Uhm.. Yes

Kurai: From Pnp?

Me: You still remember? Yes

Kurai: Nice to meet you

We exchanged a handshake..

Kurai: I think I like you Musa

Me: Uhm.. Thank you, That's very nice of you

Kurai: I'll be in my room

Ken: Where were you?

Kurai: I went to see Dad but he was not around,  
Spent the day with Kodessa

Ken: Really?

Kurai: Yeap

She walked to her room..

Ken: I'm proud of you

Sedi laid her head on Ken's chest..

Ken: Let's go make you something to eat

They went to the kitchen...

GABI

We were sitting in the lounge eating, I was staring at my plate..

Evelyn: uRight Sisi? (Are you okay)

I looked at her..

Me: Yaa I'm okay, Just not feeling too well

Mom: Yini? Kwenzenjani? (What's wrong)

Me: I think I'm coming down with flu

Mom: I see even your eyes are swollen

Me: I'm going to lie down

Evelyn: I'll bring you a cup of warm water

I walked to the bedroom..

MUSA

I dressed up..

Ken: Are you ready to go?

Me: Yes we are

He got into the bedroom..

Ken: Khathele njani (I'm tired)

Me: When you drop us off you can rest

Ken: I am going to fall asleep behind the wheel



Me: Okay what do you suggest we do?

Ken: Maybe sleep, I bought Sedi a few things  
so..

Me: We not sleeping

Ken: So how are you getting home Twana?

I looked at him and laughed....

Me: You seriously going to bullshit a bullshitter?

Ken: I am just saying, Situation doesn't really  
allow

Kurai: I'll drive you home

She dragged her sleepers to the kitchen..

Ken: Askies? Is there any part of this conversation that includes you?

Kurai: They want to go home, I'm not tired

Ken: Safuna uhlala la endlini? (Do you still wanna stay here)

Kurai: Are you kicking me out?

Ken: I'm just asking

Kurai: Phela I do have a father you know

Ken: Then go there

Me: That was not nice Babe

Ken: I'll drive you guys home

Me: Kurai is going to drive us?

Ken: Wena sowujola no Kurai? (Are you dating Kurai)

Me: Ken I'm not spending a night just because you wanna get into my pants

Kurai: Vele ubone nje ukuthi Weeeh

I chuckled..

Ken: Fede sharp

Me: Awww ngiyadlala (I'm only joking)

Ken: Naa ku Grand khaphanani (It's okay she can take you home)

Me: Don't be like that

Ken: Fede, Let me go out for a smoke

Just when he walked away, Kurai showed up.  
We looked at each other and laughed.

.

To be continued

The start of insert 32 is an event that's yet to happen. Hence when you read further down it states "A week before the fight" meaning that what the first part entailed is something that's coming in a week's time in the story. The fight hasn't happened yet. Meaning we will find out what led to the fight as we approach their week

Don't get it confused, Just wanted to heart  
attack you guys a little 😂

THE NARCISSIST

32

MUSA

Me: So you no longer wanted him? Now he has raped you?

Gabi: Yes you won't believe now because you exchanging sexual favours with him for a better life than the sad depressing one that you previously had!!

Thuli: At least she has a job, What do you have? What do you have?

Evelyn: You shut up!! Shut the fuck up, If it wasn't for me. She wouldn't even have a job

Gabi: Thuli you the last one to talk, When your

cousin goes around telling everyone that you sleeping with her brother! Incest

Me: Fuck you Gabi!! Why don't you just go back to cutting yourself you miserable bitch!

Evelyn: I will fucken drop you down like a bad habit!! Now because you have little cents coming in, You better? You ungrateful hoe of babylon. You should be thanking me hoe!!

Gabi: Miserable? You grew up in poverty you bitch! Your life only got better when that witch Mother of yours died! Ken doesn't even love you he initiated a sexual relationship with me, Paying me to have sex with him!

Evelyn: One thing you should be doing is putting

a hot two plate stove your pussy so iStove sibe  
ku 6

Thuli: At least she has a life, Gabi what do you  
have?

Me: How the fuck is you and I beefing Gabi?  
You don't even have matric, How has it come to  
this? Inclined my mother in this shit?

Gabi: Fuck you, Then go tell her in her grave I  
said fuck her too. TF did you know that your  
brother and cousin are fucking? It's because  
you peep through the window don't you?

Me: Fuck off bitch! At least my pain doesn't  
make me cut myself



Gabi: At least my kids at 3 were already learning to speak, Maybe instead of running after Ken's dick. You can actually try and be a good mother!!

Almost the whole street came alive at night, Witnessing Gabi and I exchanging words late at night.. Her sister Evelyn was on her side, My cousin Thuli was on mine. Yes extreme alcohol consumption was involved.

A WEEK EARLIER (BEFORE THE FIGHT)

GABI

I bandaged my wrists after reading a text from Ken. It stated:

"Our agreement is off. You off the hook, My sex life with my girlfriend is better than I had

imagined. Take care"

He blocked me right after sending that message..

With everything that has been going on, I had trusted the money that Ken was going to give me from our agreement. It was meant to keep the peace at home..

Now I'm back to square one....

MUSA

It was early in the morning, Just finished preparing for work and preparing Sedi too. Ken fetched us..

Sedi was starting to feel comfortable and getting used to Ken, They have a lovely relationship. Not forgetting Aneni..

Ken tried to kiss me, But pulled back..

Ken: What's wrong?

Me: It's nothing

He squeezed my cheek..

Ken: Talk to me

Me: I'm worried about Gabi

He sighed..

Me: I think she's cutting herself, She has bandages around her wrists

Ken: If Gabi is having issues. Let her family deal with it, Let them help her

Me: She's my best friend Baby, She's been there for me at my worst

Ken: You said she doesn't want to talk, You can't force her too. Forcing her might just blow her fuse

He picked up Lesedi..

Ken: Let's go.. It's a bit chilly

He opened the door and strapped Sedi in her car seat at the back..

I got in at the front..

GABI

I looked at my phone then grabbed it from the bed. I called my ex boyfriend..

Him: Hi

Me: Hey

Him: What do you want?

Me: I just wanted us to talk

Him: Talk about what? There's nothing to talk about

Me: You don't understand

Him: What don't I understand?

Me: The real reason why I dumped you, is because I.. I was raped

He laughed..

Him: You pathetic!!.. Goodbye and don't ever call me

MUSA

Me: This Saturday it's her birthday, Maybe I can do something for her. A chill out maybe just to cheer her up. I'm off Saturday and Sunday

Ken: That could work in a way

Me: I'll talk to her and see

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

34

KEN

A WEEK LATER

It was a Saturday afternoon. Musa was not going to be available for the day, Since she was doing something for her best friend. I fetched Sedi at around 11am, Aneni agreed to sleep over tonight to babysit Sedi whilst Musa and her friend have the day to themselves. I was conflicted about this whole thing, More over since our not so good split with Gabi. Musa is stubborn so I let her be..

Another thing that happened this week was



Kurai's sickness. She told me she had a miscarriage, But online she was trending that she actually had an abortion. She confided to a "Trusted" friend who later on betrayed her by spilling the beans. She was discharged yesterday, Started trending last night. Today, She was locked in her room the whole day scared and embarrassed to face us. Me to be more precise..

Aneni came back with the bowl of mixed fruit salad..

Aneni: She's still not opening

Me: This is ridiculous!

I got up from the couch and walked to her

bedroom, To be stopped by Aneni half way.

Aneni: Wait a minute now Ken, She's already feeling bad about it

Me: I don't care if she feels bad about it, She fucked up and that's that. She needs to stop feeling sorry for herself

Aneni: I know but give her some time, She already knows that she messed up

Me: I don't understand.. An abortion?

Aneni: Well it's her decision, Plus she's protecting her reputation

Me: I never sent her to be a Slay Queen, Never sent her to that life. What reputation is it if you sleeping with different Men like you are struggling

My phone rang..

Aneni: Stand right here.. Let me get it

She got it..

Aneni: It's your Dad

Me: He's probably seen it

MUSA

I kept on pacing up and down with my heart beating very fast..

Thuli: Calm down, I'm sure you not the only one she's told

Me: She told me, I told Gabi because I trusted her

Thuli: You think Gabi told on her? Like went to the internet and said "Hey. My best friend told me her boyfriend's sister had an abortion" Do you think Gabi would do that? How many secrets have you told her and has she ever told?

Me: Kurai hasn't said anything to me about this, Hasn't asked me anything

Kurai told me that she was having an abortion, On Wednesday. She was scared and trusted me with the secret. I told Gabi in form of asking for advice because I didn't wanna be caught in the middle if Ken found out. Today, We woke up to Kurai trending about the abortion saga..

Thuli: Just don't stress, You and Kurai have known each other for a second. If she has entrusted you with this secret, I'm sure she has entrusted a few others too. I don't think Gabi did it

Me: I sure hope not..

GABI

I looked at the notification. R500 had been deposited. I told this other Twitter troll by the name of Musa Khawula, That one of the biggest influencers known to the game had an abortion masked as a miscarriage. I sold him the information, Based on everything that Musa my friend sent me. Musa had also sent me a picture of Kurai in a hospital bed, And took a screenshot of their conversation with Kurai and sent me. I needed money so I sold the information for R500..

At least the troll Musa Khawula doesn't really say the source, Even if he did. I wouldn't care..

What led me to doing apart from needing money was the fact that this morning when I passed by to see how my "birthday party" preparations were going, Ken was there

fetching Lesedi. It's unfair that Musa gets to have it all, Meanwhile I lost it all because of her boyfriend..

They playing picture perfect family whilst Ken ruined my life..

Evelyn: It's 13:00 are you ready to go? I'm sure they almost done

Me: Yaa sure

Evelyn: Musa went all out to spend R1800 on you for this party, The least you can do is actually be happy. How many friends would spend 1.8k for their friend's birthday? That money can buy groceries

Me: She didn't have too, Ken supplied

Evelyn: Either way. Musa planned everything for you because she loves you and worried about you

Me: Can we go and get this thing over and done with?

Evelyn: Happy birthday by the way

Me: Okay

KEN

Dad: Exactly what's happening with Kurai?



Me: I truly don't know Dad

Dad: An abortion?

Me: I'm shocked myself

Dad: Was keeping the baby that difficult?

Me: It must've been with a married man

Dad: What are you saying?

Kurai: I need to talk to you

Me: Dad we will talk again

I hung up and turned around. She was in her Pjs,  
Eyes red and swollen..

Kurai: I know you disappointed and everything,  
Before I say anything. I want you to know th-

I slapped her across the face..

Aneni: Ken!!

Me: Out of everything that you've ever done in  
your life to disappoint me, This is by far the  
worst!!

Aneni: Can we keep it down, The baby is  
napping

Kurai: Fuck the baby!! Her Mother is the one who betrayed me!!

Me: What?

Kurai: I recognize the conversation from when it was posted, It was a conversation between your girlfriend and I!! Look

She showed me their conversation, And showed me what was posted on Twitter..

Kurai: Maybe before your hand itches again, You should take note of the snake you keeping around you. I trusted her enough to confide in her

She walked away..

Aneni: This ain't right, Why would Musa do this??  
Are you sure you can trust this girl?

MUSA

I hugged her tight as Thuli sang her a happy  
birthday..

Me: Happy birthday my friend

Gabi: Thank you

I broke the hug, She wiped her tears..

Gabi: Thank you so much my friend, I needed this especially considering the trauma you recently went through too

Evelyn: Wow!! Gabi come see the table

We walked to the living room..

Me: Thuli did most of everything, She's good with such things

Gabi: Thank you so much guys. With everything that's been happening, You are a true friend  
Musa

Evelyn: I need to take pictures before we start

eating and drinking

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

33

MUSA

On my break, I went to talk to Evelyn. Gabi's sister..

Evelyn: I don't know what's going on with her now. Gabi has been acting strange, She is depressed. She says it's because of the breakup with her boyfriend

Me: I also noticed that she cuts herself

Evelyn: She does. I'm so worried about her, She might commit suicide

Me: It's her birthday this coming weekend, I was thinking of doing something for her. Chill and what not, To cheer her up

Evelyn: That could work, Thank you so much

Me: I'll talk to her when I knock off

KURAI (KENZO'S SISTER)

Ever since I met Musa that day, I liked her from the get go. I like how she is able to put Ken in

his place, She knows how to stand her ground and she is different..

Aneni: Do you think she's going to last?

Me: I am not sure, But I like her too. She makes him humble, and brings out a better side to him

Aneni: That is true. He's more laid back now, More reversed and everything

Sedi ran up to us holding my makeup brushes..

Me: Anything to keep Barbie away

Sedi tapped me on my thigh with one of the makeup brushes..



Me: Wanna play with those? Let's go

I picked her up and went out to the bedroom..

MUSA

I was in the bathroom when I called Gabi..

Gabi: Hey

Me: Hi babe, How are you?

Gabi: I am well and you?

Me: I'm okay.. Look I know your birthday is

coming up this Friday. On Saturday I wanna do something small for you. Cook, Buy you a cake etc at my house

Gabi: I am not up for that

Me: Gabi I know you not feeling well, Haven't been. On my side, I'm busy too. But I just want us to chill, Talk and catch up. I'm worried about you

Gabi: I understand but..

Me: Ken is even contributing

Gabi: He is?

Me: Yes

Gabi: Well then we can do it, At your house

Me: Thank you.. That's good

Gabi: Sharp I'll hear from you

Me: No problem

KENZO

I looked at her.. She looked at me..

I threw my card on the stack..

She put her cards down..

Mom: Checkmate!

Me: Flip!!!

She laughed..

Mom: I still got it

Me: I see

Mom: The last time you were here, You wanted to murder me

Me: That was then.. This is now

Mom: What happened? Who is she?

I chuckled..

Me: Let's play

Mom: Nope who is she, I'm not letting you go this time around incase you come back tomorrow mad

Me: Her name is Musa.. She's an amazing soul

Mom: Is she now?

Me: Has a 3 year old Daughter who is a

sweetheart

Mom: That sounds good

Me: It is good

Mom: She told you to come back?

Me: No.. Kurai went to see Dad and kodessa,  
Thought I'd face my demons too

Mom: I'm the demon kahle kahle

Me: You the demon

She laughed..

Mom: Ken.. I want you to know that I am truly s-

Me: Don't.. Let's not do this, We having a good time. Let's keep it like that. Forget about the past, And work on the now

Mom: I am all for that, Maybe we'll visit it sometime

Me: Yes.. Sometime

MUSA

Kurai sent me pictures of Sedi in makeup. I laughed. Then responded back:

"You guys"

I put my phone away when a customer came..

Life felt better. Not perfect but better. I have an amazing boyfriend, I'm working. Life at Home with Pakiso is on and off, But at least with all my pain there's a bit of good in it..

At least that's what I thought, Until what happened a few days after today. Leading to one of the worst fights I've ever been subjected too.. With that fight, Life went back to not making sense anymore.. If I knew what was going to happen, If I knew that an act of kindness towards a friend was going to be the worst nightmare and the worst consequence of my life. I would've left Gabi alone..



.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

35

MUSA

It was a small thing or meant to be a small thing,  
But a few neighbours came along and we had a  
good time. It was nice and refreshing to see  
Gabi loosening up, Having fun and happy. That  
was the sole purpose of it all..

As the day went, I tried calling Ken. He wasn't  
picking up, I just wanted to check on Sedi. It  
was weird, So I walked out and called Aneni..

Aneni: Hi

Me: Hi.. I hope you not sleeping

Aneni: Was just preparing too

Me: I tried calling Ken but he's not picking up

Aneni: He's not here

Me: Okay.. How is Lesedi?

Aneni: She is sleeping, She played a lot outside when she woke up in the afternoon. I just bathe her and put her back to sleep

Me: Okay thank you Aneni, Just wanted to find out at what time will Ken drop her off tomorrow

Aneni: Try calling him later or in the morning

Me: I will try

Aneni: Good night, Have fun

Me: Good night

I hung up. That was a bit weird, She sounded cold for some reason..

KEN

Aneni showed up in the lounge..

Aneni: For how long are you planning on avoiding her?

Me: I'm not avoiding her, Just want her to have a good time before this issue can be discussed

Aneni: Well it's 21:00, I'm going to bed. She sounded tipsy, She probably be drunk in a few. I would switch my phone off if her Daughter wasn't here

Me: There's no need to act different towards her

Aneni: I am not sure if I can trust her that's all.

She was entrusted with a secret, And she sold out Kurai

Me: That's why I say the has to be a good explanation for it

Aneni: I hope so.. Goodnight

Me: Goodnight

I felt bad and guilty about raising my hand on kurai, But most of all. I was confused by what Musa did. Why would she do that?..

I took my phone and called her, Just to gain clarity..

MUSA

I took another can from the fridge. Gabi was halfway drunk by now..

Gabi: My friend.. This was the best party Thank You again

Me: Thank you for allowing me to do this for you

My phone vibrated in my hand..

Me: It's Ken.. I'll be back

I went outside to answer it..

Me: Hey.. I've been trying to get a hold of you

Ken: Why?

Me: What do you mean why?

Ken: I mean why did you sell out Kurai like that?

Me: What do you mean?

Ken: You Snitching makes me angry but you acting dumb, Makes me more angry

Me: Ken what are you on about?

Ken: Don't make me a fool!! You snitched on Kurai, About the Abortion? Things that people tweeted about her can lead her to depression do you know that?

Me: I saw that, But I didn't snitch

Ken: Ngangenzi slima!! (don't make me a fool)

Me: I didn't!!

Ken: Check the screenshots, They are your conversation with her

Me: I.. Ohw my word.. I.. I told Gabi about it b-

Ken: Wenzeni? (What did you do)



Me: I didn't think she.. I was just talking to her as my best friend and..

He hung up..

Me: Ken?? Ken??

KEN

Kurai dragged her luggage bag to the kitchen..

Me: What are you doing?

Kurai: I'm moving out for a while

Me: Kurai

Kurai: I don't think I wanna see you and your girlfriend right now, I can't trust this girl no more and I don't think you gonna leave her

Me: You don't have to leave because of Musa, This is your home

Kurai: Ohw I just don't wanna be physically attacked again, I'm still in pain to be facing violence

Me: What Musa did was wrong, But you can't fully hide behind her. You did have an abortion and lied about it too

Kurai: This is the reason why I lied about it

Me: Kurai listen

Kurai: I'm driving to Dad's

Me: You don't have to leave.. Please, I'm sorry. We can talk about this, It might be harder to get over it but.. Please don't leave, I'm sorry. Musa didn't actually sell you out, She told a friend who sold you out

Kurai: She had no business, Telling my business to her friends!

Me: I know and I'll sort this mess out with her, I promise you. She will pay for this

MUSA

Me: I trusted you!!!

Gabi: But.. She's a Slay Queen eventually it was going to come out

Me: That doesn't matter!!.. What matters is that I trusted you!!

Thuli: That was a wrong move Gabi, Things that friends talk about, You don't go around telling others

Evelyn: After what Musa did for you today, You were wrong

Me: I never took you for a snake

Gabi: Ohw please Ms perfect get off your high horse!! Your boyfriend paid for this because he's feeling guilty!.. Ken is a rapist!! He wanted me so much that he actually forced himself onto me

Me: What?? First you sell his sister out now you throwing such accusations

Evelyn: Gabi what are you talking about?

Gabi: Ken raped me.. He's a rapist

Me: I don't believe this, You know what get out

of my house you ungrateful snake!!

Evelyn: Is that why you've been depressed?

She nodded..

Thuli: Why you never said, Why speak now? I'm starting to think you want Ken so bad that you are trying to start shit between Musa and him Ngamabomu

Evelyn: Awuthule wena druggie! (Shut up you druggie)

Me: That's it. Get out both of you!!

Getting Gabi and Evelyn out of the house

became a struggle, A real one. It led to a physical altercation, One taken out to the street..

Me: So you no longer wanted him? Now he has raped you?

Gabi: Yes you won't believe now because you exchanging sexual favours with him for a better life than the sad depressing one that you previously had!!

Thuli: At least she has a job, What do you have? What do you have?

Evelyn: You shut up!! Shut the fuck up, If it wasn't for me. She wouldn't even have a job

Gabi: Thuli you the last one to talk, When your cousin goes around telling everyone that you sleeping with her brother! Incest

Me: Fuck you Gabi!! Why don't you just go back to cutting yourself you miserable bitch!

Evelyn: I will fucken drop you down like a bad habit!! Now because you have little cents coming in, You better? You ungrateful hoe of babylon. You should be thanking me hoe!!

Gabi: Miserable? You grew up in poverty you bitch! Your life only got better when that witch Mother of yours died! Ken doesn't even love you he initiated a sexual relationship with me, Paying me to have sex with him!



Evelyn: One thing you should be doing is putting a hot two plate stove your pussy so iStove sibe ku 6

Thuli: At least she has a life, Gabi what do you have?

Me: How the fuck is you and I beefing Gabi? You don't even have matric, How has it come to this? Inclined my mother in this shit?

Gabi: Fuck you, Then go tell her in her grave I said fuck her too. TF did you know that your brother and cousin are fucking? It's because you peep through the window don't you?

Me: Fuck off bitch! At least my pain doesn't make me cut myself

Gabi: At least my kids at 3 were already learning to speak, Maybe instead of running after Ken's dick. You can actually try and be a good mother!!

Almost the whole street came alive, Witnessing Gabi and I exchanging words. Evelyn was on her side, My cousin Thuli was on mine..

Me: Don't ever come to my house!!

Gabi: Kanti sincengani? (What would we be begging for)

Thuli: Tsek you green snake in a green grass

A couple of girls from our street pulled Thuli

and I back to the house, Gabi and Evelyn went to theirs with Gabi busy shouting ontop of her voice that I'm dating a rapist.

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

36

MUSA

I had hoped that when I wake up the next day,  
All this would be one big nightmare. Something  
I thought happened, But never did.  
Unfortunately my wishes were short-lived, It did  
happen and it was the talk of the hood. I only

got out of bed at 13:00. By then Thuli who has been wandering the streets since morning, Heard all the bad things that Gabi went around chanting about us. Apparently after the fight, Her and her sister went to the pub. They said a lot of pretty bad things there. Talking about my mother passed on, It's not even a month since she's passed and already we were having a celebration dedicated to her passing. Happy that the "Witch is gone" with her witchcraft. She said that My brother and cousin sleep together, So much that I actually peep through and that Thuli had an abortion by Pakiso. Chanting I'm only prostituting myself to Ken, That I don't really love him but love his money...

I would say Thuli is exaggerating, But a few people had been knocking to tell the tale.

If there was a part in my life where I felt like dying, It would be now. I just can't because of Sedi..

Speaking of Sedi, Ken was on the way to drop her off.. Reason why I woke up...

KEN

Ace approached my car, I got out..

Ace: It's Sunday

Me: Yeah this couldn't wait

He leaned against the car and folded his arms..

Ace: Ken, I thought umncwasile lo mntwana (I thought you loved this girl)

Me: I do.. Hence I'm doing this, So how we looking?

Ace: I will follow the manager tomorrow when she knocks off. Tell her that she has to set Musa up so she can get fired

Me: Yiyo eng'celayo (That's all I'm asking)

Ace: It's the easiest shit you've ever asked me to do without involving blood

I took out the envelope..

Me: That's why it's cheap too.. 4k

He took it..

Ace: Then uGabi? Phela ukwenze kabi, I had to intervene. She was Pap drunk, Screaming in the pub you a rapist

Me: Naa leave that one to me

Ace: You not worried business won't go well?

Me: Business will go well, At her expense

Ace: Yeeeh? Uthini? Dark magic?

Me: Naa.. Nothing intense, Masole once suggested something to me

Ace: Yeah?

Me: It's called none of your business

Ace: Won't she suspect and consult?

Me: How can you suspect something that you won't know is even happening

Ace: That's advance moss

Me: Yeah.. Cava later (I'll see you later)



Ace: Wola Eyam'

KURAI

I joined my Dad at the table outside for lunch..

Me: Dad

Dad: Kurai

I poured juice..

Dad: How are you feeling?

Me: Is that really what you want to ask me?

He looked at me..

Me: I know you disappointed in me, I know you wish that we never reconciled. Probably thinking that you only had Ken and Kodessa only, I know I'm a disappointment

Dad: Is that the real reason why you hated me and only used my absentia as an excuse?

Me: Don't do that.. Don't manipulate me into thinking that it was right for you to abandon us. I moved away from Ken being a Narcissist and a manipulator, I'm not here to face another one

Dad: Ken is Ken, Kodessa is Kodessa and you are you. I'd never compare you to them, You

have something you passionate about and it's working for you. Yes not in a way that as a Parent I would hope but.. It keeps you sane, Gave you an identity. Plus you an Adult, All the decisions you make and mistakes. They affect you, Not me. I've made my own mistakes too and that's that

Me: Thank you for not judging

Dad: I'm just glad I have a relationship with all my kids, I can die peacefully

Me: Psssh you dying, I don't see it happening

Dad: I don't see it too

We both laughed..

GABI

Mom: I can't even go out on the street and walk peacefully without being told my Daughter this and that. Gabi you have disappointed me, Embarrassed me and shamed me!.. What on earth has gotten into you? Swearing at someone about their Mother?

Me: I did not!! Musa and her cousin are making things up to make me look bad. Obviously everyone is going to believe her because she's never been wrong in this hood

Mom: All these people are lying on you?

Me: Yes!.. I'm Gabi the notorious skirt of the hood, Obviously everything will fit me. No matter how bad

Mom: I don't know what I did to deserve you as a daughter

Evelyn: Mom

Mom: Don't Mom me!! You were greatly involved in this too. You older, I expected better from you. Keep your little sister in check!!

She walked out..

Evelyn: Did Ken really rape you?

I looked at her..

Me: So you don't believe me too? If you wanna take Musa's side and defend her just say it

Evelyn: I never said that

Me: Gosh!!!

MUSA

I opened for them, Sedi was happy to see me. I took her. Ken put her things on the table..

Me: Did you have fun?

Ken: Everything is there, If I forgot something.  
She'll get it tomorrow

Me: Ken..

Ken: The arrangement still stands, Aneni will take care of Sedi. Though she's very concerned now, I am too. The last thing I want is my very dedicated and honest helper to be trending on the net

Me: I can explain

Ken: You didn't snitch on Kurai?

Me: I never put it out, I just told Gabi. I didn't even tell her in a way that I was dissing Kurai, I

just told her as a friend

Ken: Manje set up yakho no Gabi, Included my sister?

Me: It was wrong I admit

Ken: Do you know that a mental illness is deadly. Kurai can be depressed to suicide and all because of you!! You don't even know how much my sister loved you and you do this? Why? What did she do to you?

Me: I never meant for it to happen like that, I'm sorry! (Crying)

Ken: Do you even love me? Did you even love



me? Was I a fool in all of this? What was your end game? Did you and Gabi orchestrate this? To bring me down? She's screaming rape now. I never even touched her on my Mother's grave

Me: No!! (crying) I.. I just trusted someone that I shouldn't have trusted

Ken: Didn't I tell you about this girl? Didn't I tell you about all of this?

Me: You did

Ken: Out of everything I could be accused of, Rape?! Kahle kahle tell me something. When have you ever seen a relationship working where a friend is involved? I don't know what's with you females and jealousy when one gets a

man

I put Sedi down and wiped my tears..

Me: I'm so sorry

Ken: Sedi is growing up, What kind of a mother do you want her to see you? Your mother passed on not long ago. To even throw a party in her house? What message are you putting out to your neighbours? Not even your party, Gabi doesn't have a house? Couldn't you guys go somewhere at least? Another thing that attracted me to you was that you were mature, Smart. Now I don't think so, You no different from any stupid hood rat. If I wanted a woman who would spend her life involved in hood rat fights I would've gotten one from the pub.

There's many of them. You do such shit and you

expect your little brother to respect you? How is he going too? What kind of a bride will I be bringing home?

Me: Ngithe ngiyaxolisa nje (I said I was sorry)

He shook his head..

Me: It was one stupid mistake Ken

Ken: A mistake that messed up a lot of things

Me: If you don't want me anymore I understand

Ken: No.. You fucked up! You acted stupid.  
Admit without suggesting an easy way out

Me: I fucked up and acted stupid, I admit I already feel terrible about it

Sedi walked up to him, He picked her up.

Ken: Come here

I walked up to them..

Ken: Do you wanna be with me? Do you actually care about this relationship? About us?

Me: I love you and I care about us

Ken: Then you need to stop this thing of friends,

You see how they are

Me: I've learned my lesson

Ken: Good..

He hugged me with his other hand and kissed me..

Ken: I never wanna hear about this Gabi no more, Nor any other friend.. Agreed?

Me: Agreed

He kissed me again..

Ken: Pack an overnight bag, A bit of fresh air from here. You look like you need it

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

37

MUSA

The ride away from home was the hardest. Gabi was dedicated to ruining my life and everything of mine. I kept on getting back to back whatsapp confronting messages. People that were close to us, That we used to gossip about as friends. She went and told them about what I've said, Not even mentioning her part of the conversation.

It was hectic, I am currently the biggest enemy in the hood right now because of her. We fought, We should separate in peace. I hate friends who do that, After the fight they go around spreading shit newspaper about you..

When we got to Ken's place I bathe Sedi, Then prepared some food to eat for us.

Kurai was not here, But my heart sank on the hypothesis that she might walk in. The last thing I've ever wanted, Was to cause division between Ken and his family. I've been through toxic "In laws" with Sedi's father, It wasn't nice. Especially when they also denied her in my face, It was shitty...

BARBIE

Mom: Maybe you should call him first and prepare him for this

Me: Ken is not one to call and deliver such news too over the phone he won't take me seriously

Mom: What if you get there and he's not around?

Me: I'll come back, I have enough money to go and come back

Mom: I can drive you

Me: Mom I'm fine please!



Mom: Okay then, Fine.. Call me if it doesn't go well

Me: I will.. My Bolt is 2min away

Mom: Okay honey see you later

KEN

I was smoking outside and on the phone with Masole..

Masole: The only ritual I can do is if you sleep with her whilst she's on her periods. Come inside of her and then take the mixture of your sperm and her blood. Bring it to me, I will create

a tokoloshe for you. It'll be a spiritual child tied to the both of you, The more it grows spiritually the richer you will be

Me: That's not an option. I can't sleep with Gabi now, She won't budge and I don't want Musa actually finding out what really happened

Masole: Okay we can freeze her, From ever speaking ill against you and your girlfriend

Me: How?

Masole: All I need is some of her hair

Me: I can do that

Masole: Then contact me

Me: Sure thing

My businesses are actually doing well so the freezing thing might actually work.. I just don't want any negativity surrounding my relationship. I feel very strongly about Musa, Despite her shortcomings but she's someone I'd actually build a family with..

GABI

We were at the Pub & Grill just me and my sister..

Evelyn: Yaa Musa yena she's ungrateful, To

think that I considered her for the job opening at Pnp, And this is how she repays us

Me: I'm telling you, Problem she thinks she's all that. I was thinking

Evelyn: About?

Me: Knocking her off her high pedestal

Evelyn: How?

Me: Actually taking Ken away from her

Evelyn: I thought you said he raped you

Me: He did, But.. Just to spite Musa. Plus, You know Mom.. She expects money from me even though I'm not working

Evelyn: We need to move out of home, That woman is toxic

Me: Let me get Ken, I mean look at this place

Evelyn: Not for it, But if you feel strongly about it.. Then go for it

Me: Exactly, Musa was my best friend. How the fuck does she defend someone she doesn't even know that well, Someone who is the devil over her best friend. I wish her Daughter gets raped so she can see, I don't think she will believe her

Evelyn: I wish Pakiso and them abuse her goed!!

I raised my glass up..

Me: Cheers

Evelyn: Cheers

MUSA

I was done cooking and dishing up.. Ken walked up to me and hugged me from the back....

He kissed me on my cheek...

Ken: How are you feeling now?

Me: I don't know.. She's practically ruining my life

Ken: Well haters are always gonna be there, But don't allow them to disturb your peace. You working..

He kissed me again on my cheek..

Ken: And you have a good relationship

Me: A good relationship?

I turned and looked at him..

Ken: According to me it's good

I kissed him back..

Me: It is good

Ken: So we keeping our peace no matter what?

Me: No matter what

Ken: I love you so much

Me: I love you too

The monitor went off..



Me: Expecting someone?

Ken: No.. Let's see

He walked over and checked, Then he leaned his head against the wall and exhaled..

Me: What?

He turned, Buried his hands deep in his pockets..

Ken: Don't get mad

Me: Why? Who is there?

Ken: It's my ex Barbie

Me: What?

Ken: Just wanna know what she wants

He opened the gate..

Ken: I'll handle this

He opened the door..

Me: What are you doing?

Ken: To ask what she wants

Me: No.. Let her come in, I wanna hear too

Ken: Musa you not in a good space

Me: Let her come in, I am not gonna be for private conversations. She's an Ex right? So you have nothing to worry about

The door opened wider..

Voice: Ken??

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

MUSA

He strangled me till I passed out.. I awoke to him sitting on the coffee table, His elbows balancing on his lap and his hands closer to his mouth.. He was looking at me..

I freaked out when I didn't see Lesedi in the room..

Ken: She's passed out, I put her to bed so she can rest

I sat up straight with my hand on my throat..

Ken: You brought a side to me tonight, That I

didn't knew existed in me

Me: Which side? Beating a woman?

Ken: I didn't beat you, I put my hands on you to calm you down

Me: You could've killed me

Ken: You over exaggerating now

Me: I can't do this Ken, I think it's better we break up. I can't do you with a kid

Ken: Pardon? I'm doing you with a kid and I don't complain. I adore Lesedi

Me: Yes but I don't come with a crazy baby daddy

Ken: Barbie won't be a problem

Me: She insulted me

Ken: You both did, You both provoked each other

Me: She's going to ruin our relationship

Ken: Are you threatened by her?

I kept quiet..

Ken: Barbie is fake, She's living fake to impress people she doesn't know on the Internet. Meanwhile you, You are you. You live your truth, It would greatly put me off if you were to change a thing about yourself, Except for your attitude and stubbornness. Barbie was a mistake that should've never happened

Me: Why didn't you tell me she was pregnant?

Ken: I also found out tonight

He brought the table closer and held my hands..

Ken: I love you, And obviously you and I have strong personalities but.. You need to tone it down a bit, Please.. Tonight was messed up,

And it shouldn't have happened. Leave Barbie to me, I won't let her come in between us

Me: Promise?

Ken: I promise, And also to not be put my hands on you

Me: Happens again, I'm leaving you

Ken: And I'll let you go without any repercussions

Me: Okay

Ken: Let's go to bed, You have work tomorrow



He got up and kissed me on my forehead..

Ken: I love you

Me: I love you too

GABI

I woke up the next morning with a huge hangover. The guy we met last night, His name is Thami. I woke up with him sleeping next to me, Naked..

I looked around, It was only the two of us..

Me: Thami

I shook him..

He woke up..

Me: Where is my Sister?

Thami: She left with one of my friends last night,  
You don't remember?

Me: No I don't

Thami: I don't blame you, You were out of it

I cleared my throat..

Me: Did we at least use a condom?

Thami: Yes

Me: Thank God.. Please walk me home

Thami: No problem

MUSA

Ken: Are you done?

Me: Almost

Ken: What's taking you so long, You going to be

late

Me: I'm done

I took my bag..

Ken: Let's go I need to pass by my Father's after dropping you off

Aneni: Have a good day at work

Me: Thank you

I kissed Lesedi..

Me: Good bye baby.. I love you

Ken put his hand on my butt and led me out..

BARBIE

Me: Her name is Musa

Officer: Where does she stay?

Me: I don't know, But currently at my ex boyfriend's place.. Here, I'll write the address

I wrote Ken's address..

Officer: So you went there last night, She attacked you?

I showed him the bruise..

Me: She threw me down, And I am pregnant

I showed him the proof..

Me: So I'm here to lay a charge of assault for her

GABI

I got home to my Mother screaming at me..

Evelyn was not around. After she had screamed her lungs out, I closed the bedroom door and

threw myself on the bed..

I took my phone and called Evelyn, Her phone was off..

I wanted my money, She can't run away with my money..

MUSA

Work was a better distraction for me. The manager was acting weird today, Avoiding me and shit..

I just got on with my job, Whilst talking to Thandeka..

Thandeka: Wow, Some other friends

Me: I'm telling you

Thandeka: Just be grateful she showed herself now, Imagine what she would've done later on

Me: True

Thandeka: Just let her be.. Karma will get to her

KURAI

He showed up with Dad in the living room..

Ken: Hey



Me: Hi

Ken: How are you

Me: I'm good and you

Ken: I'm good

Dad: Ken is here to sort it out between you two

Ken: I'm sorry I hit you

Me: Whatever

Dad: Kurai

Ken: You very disrespectful Kurai, But raising my hand on you wasn't right. With that, I apologise and I want you back home

Me: Ohw

Ken: Please

Me: You still with her?

Ken: Yes.. Another reason why I want you to come home, She wants to explain it to you

Me: She didn't do it?

Ken: Not the way you think. She told a friend and the friend blasted you because the friend has issues with Musa

Dad: It was wrong Kurai, But she didn't do it. A friend did it, If it wasn't for the friend I'm sure she would've kept it to the grave

Ken: True.. Please come home

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

38

GABI

I was out of it now. Dancing on the counter, I was wearing a short dress. I was busy lifting it up a little, Guys kept on throwing R20s and R50s. I was being hyped, And I loved it. An easier way to make money..

Some of them were taking videos. I took the dumpie of savanna, Knelt on the counter and shoved it deep my throat whilst facing up. The alcohol went down, When I was about to choke. I took it out and coughed..

I raised my hands up..

Me: Yeeeeeeey!!

Everyone followed busy hyping me..

Some guy tried to touch my thigh..

Me: Touching is R100

Evelyn was busy collecting the money being thrown at me..

MUSA

She walked in.. Holding a handbag. Makeup on point, Wig, Jumpsuit and heels..

She looked beautiful no lie, And I couldn't hate..

Her: Ohw

Ken: What are you doing here Barbie?

Barbie: You and I need to talk, Seriously

Ken looked at me, I looked at him with a serious face..

Ken: Anything you wanna talk to me about, You have to talk to me about it in front of Musa

Barbie: Who the hell is Musa?

Ken: Musa.. She's my girlfriend

She looked at me and giggled, Whilst blinking a lot..

Ken: Wait a minute, You dating her? I thought she was a new maid

I laughed and shook my head..

Me: Girl you don't know me that well to take it there

Ken: What is it?

Barbie: Can we sit down somewhere?

Ken: In the living room

She walked there first, Ken gently grabbed my

arm..

Ken: Let's go

Me: You better get here, Because.. I swear

Ken: You wanted to be a part of the conversation

GABI

I made R700 before things got wild. I had gotten off the counter, Danced on the dance floor and this other guy came. He danced behind me, Then grabbed my waist tightly dry humping me from the back..



Security escorted us out, He came with and his friends..

Him: Tsek!! Asambeni, Nagine gontshi (Let's go, I have a place)

It was him, And two of his friends..

Evelyn: Uhlalaphi? (Where do you stay)

Him: Ngale 6 (Extention 6)

Evelyn looked at me..

Me: Uzothenga? (Will you buy)

He looked at his friends..

They nodded..

Him: Sizothenga namajita (We'll buy)

Evelyn: Bottle store first then

Him: Sharp.. Asiyeni (Let's go there)

MUSA

Sedi was watching cocomelon. When we walked in, She went to Ken. Ken put her on his lap..

Barbie: Look at that, Sweet.. Who is she?

Me: She's my Daughter

Barbie: Nice

I know her, Recognise her from twitter. Seen her on Barbie's Instagram and tik tok videos. They seemed like they were friends. She's another Slay Queen/Influencer..

Barbie: You won't be needing to play Daddy anymore because..

She unzipped her bag, Took out a pregnancy stick..

Barbie: I'm pregnant

My heart sank. I parted my legs a little, Sunk my head down and shook my head..

Ken: Pardon?

Barbie: I'm pregnant.. Look

Ken: By Me?

Barbie: That time when we officially broke up, And you fucked me. I didn't take any morning after pill and anything like that.. If you don't believe me, We can go to the Dr. Count everything, And it will date back to when we had sex that last time

Ken: Shuuuuuu

Barbie: Ohw Babe don't worry, It was before you.  
Unless he been cheating on me with you, Then  
promoted you to the main after the breakup

Me: Okay.. I'm done, Ken please take us home

Ken: Musa I'm handling this

I got up from the couch..

Me: Give me my Daughter, And drive us home

Ken: Musa

Me: I wanna go home

Barbie: Take her home, She had nothing to do with the conversation

Me: Did you see me talking to you??

Barbie: Really Ken?? You couldn't do better?

Me: Girl you don't know me like that

Barbie: You right.. I don't, You and I we ain't at the same level

I honestly did feel threatened by her and her

beauty. Ken went from that to me. You know how almost close to Goddess slay queens look? I'm just your ordinary township girl. I have one wig that doesn't even look good anymore, Don't get me started on makeup. I stopped because I couldn't afford anymore, The cheap one gave me rash. So I just settled for an eyebrow pencil, Eye shadows and mascara. The most affordable ones from street vendors. I also have a kid, I can't be spending money on unnecessary things.

Me: Are you trying to check me out on the streets?

Barbie: I'm not for the streets but I will handle you

Barbie: Bring it on

She stood up..

Ken put Sedi on the couch, Who started crying..

He came and stood in the middle of us, Facing me..

Ken: No.. You guys are not getting into it

He pushed me back to my couch..

Me: She trying to check me on the streets so..

Ken: Ngiyak'khuza njalo (I am warning you)



I sat down with him standing in front of me..

Barbie: How you get mad that I fell pregnant way before you came into the picture? Bitch?? Mad that he's having his first with me? I am going to be here for a long time now!! What you mad about? Where your baby daddy at? Where your baby daddy at?

Ken tried to calm me down..

Me: I'm good..I'm calm

Barbie: Trifling rageddy bitch how the fuck you and I even fight? I'm up there and you down here?

Me: Okay excuse me, Let me get fresh air and you guys can finish talking

I got up Ken moved out my way..

As soon as he turned his back, I Grabbed Barbie by her wig. She was still standing up.

I grabbed it and she tried fighting me off, But fell..

Ken held me back by my waist..

Barbie got up..

Me: Come here.. Come here bitch!!

Barbie: Are you serious?

She got up and fixed her wig..

Ken put me down, And went to get Barbie's bag..

He gave me a death stare..

Ken: Sedi is crying!!

He dragged Barbie out, I heard him locking. I  
picked up Sedi..

Me: I know baby.. I'm sorry

I calmed Sedi down as Ken was busy with Barbie outside. I put Sedi on the couch with the dish of food. She calmed down..

The door unlocked and opened..

Ken showed up..

Me: Take us home. Right now!!

Without any warning, He put both his hands around my neck. Threw me on the couch, His knee against my chest and strangled me. He strangled me and I tried to him off but I couldn't, He was that strong..

.

To be continued

# THE NARCISSIST

40

MUSA

After work, When Ken fetched me. I was surprised to see a cop car parked outside his gate..

Ken: I'll be right back

He got out of the car and walked up to them. I sat in the car wondering what was going on. I was a bit nervous, Thinking that something happened to Sedi. Ken raised his hand, Signaling me to come..

I got out and went to them..

Ken: Barbie laid a charge of assault on you

Me: What?

Ken: I was a witness when it went down. Both Barbie and Musa attacked each other. Barbie was actually the one to first throw hands, See her neck. She strangled her to death. Musa was actually protecting herself from her

Officer: Is that right?

Me: That's right

Ken: Excuse me, I have an incoming call

He walked a distance..

Me: I didn't wanna hurt her, I pushed her off me and she fell. Hence I didn't even lay a charge because she's going through a lot

I tilted my head back..

Me: You can see the markings around my neck if you look closely

She checked..

Officer: What was the fight about?

Me: She's pregnant by my boyfriend, And they broke up. She's not happy with my being the current girlfriend. Actually all this happened in front of my 3 year old Daughter

Officer: She actually came here?

Me: Yes.. To my boyfriend's house

Officer 2: I told you about these slay queens

Her partner came out..

Me: I can lay a charge too, But she's pregnant I don't wanna put her in that stressful situation



Officer: Do you mind coming with us to the station, So you can write a statement?

Me: Not at all

I turned and looked at Ken....

GABISILE

Evelyn was still not back at all..

Now I was getting worried, Her phone was completely off..

Mom: I wish she's dead where she is, Because I can't take this stress from you guys

Me: Mom.. Something must have happened

Mom: Kakade.. Gabisile this thing of yours with Evelyn, Of busy going out and not sleeping at home. Did you think it was going to end well?

Me: Ma I don't think it's advisable to say such, especially in this situation

Mom: Evelyn missed work today, I don't even know where you guys were going last night. To swear on other people more?

Me: No

Mom: She comes back, She doesn't.. I don't

care!! She should be dead

Me: I'll go to the police station tomorrow morning, If she's not back by tonight

Mom: Kahle kahle where did you guys go?

Me: We were at the Pub Ma, I told you

Mom: You slept there?

Me: Yes

She clicked her tongue..

MUSA

I wrote down my statement..

Officer: Would you like to open a case against her too?

Me: No

Ken: Yes

I looked at him..

Ken: She almost killed you then she runs and opens a case for you? What nonsense is that

Officer: If you were there, Why didn't you calm

the situation before it escalated

Me: I was holding my girlfriend's daughter who was crying a lot, Actually took her outside to calm her down. Heard Gabi saying "I'm going to kill you". I went back in, Gabi was pinning Musa down on the couch, Musa was close to passing out

Officer: I see, All this because of you?

Ken: Do you have something against me?

Officer: No.. You seem to be speaking on her behalf a lot, What about her? She can't speak for herself?

Me: It's okay.. You can go out

Ken: Are you sure?

Me: I am

He walked out..

Officer: Be real with me, This Gabi didn't hurt you. Your boyfriend did.. Didn't he?

I swallowed nervously..

Me: No

Officer: My dear I handle a lot of cases, GBV.

This Gabi has long nails. If she strangled you,  
You would have marks of being clawed. You  
only have marks of being strangled by strong  
hands

She took another sheet..

Officer: Wanna write your statement? A real one  
this time around

KENZO

I paced up and down whilst smoking a cigarette.  
Maurice walked out..

Mau: I got your text, What are you doing here?

Me: Who is that female officer?

Mau: Amanda

Me: She's interrogating my girlfriend and I don't like where the interrogation is going

Mau: Why?

Me: I said I don't like where the interrogation is going

Mau: Fine let's go in

We walked back in. Musa was writing another statement..



Mau: Lieutenant, What's going on?

Amanda: Sir

Mau: What's happening?

I grabbed the sheet from Musa..

Me: She already gave you a statement, Why is she writing another one?

Amanda: She's telling what happened for real

Me: Is she? Because she's writing the same thing

Mau: What happened? What's the story?

I explained to Mau what happened, Mau is on my payroll..

Mau: Sounds to me like this Barbie is the one who should be brought in

Amanda: Sir

Mau: Go and arrest this Barbie, For attempted murder!

Amanda: Sir I don't th-

Mau: Then I shall handle the case Lieutenant  
thank you

Amanda looked at me..

Amanda: This is so wrong

Me: According to you or the law?

Amanda: Both

Mau: Is it? You were ready to put someone who  
is innocent in jail

Amanda kept quiet..

Me: Can we go?

Mau: Yes

We walked out..

Me: That was very uncomfortable for me

We stopped halfway to the car. I grabbed her waist and kissed her, She didn't write what happened in the second statement she wrote the same thing and the same story that we told even under pressure..

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

42

MUSA

A FEW DAYS LATER

It was sad coming back from Ken's place two days ago and learning of the death of Evelyn. Circumstances surrounding her death were very sad. It's surprising that something that terrible could happen to someone that we know, Right in the hood were we live in. Where we thought we were safe..

I just heard from Pakiso of what happened to her, I think this was planned...

It was a Friday morning when I had prepared myself for work. Same routine, Dropping Sedi off and then being dropped off at work..

I thought that at work, It was going to be a normal work routine until I was asked to the manager's office. The Area manager was also around..

Area M: Ms Mhlongo, Do you know why we called you here?

Me: Not exactly

Area M: Yesterday your till came out missing money, All the notes were missing and only coins were there

Me: That's not right. When I cashed out all the money was there and it aligned well with the amount of money that was on the cash out form

Manager: We checked your locker this morning, The money was found there all of it. Did you perhaps got scared to put it in your bag?

Me: I did not steal the money

Manager: Musa you now making us fools

Me: I swear on my mother's grave

Area M: Please stop.. Enough already!

The Area manager is white..

Me: But I did not steal

Area M: Here is the termination form. Your contract is terminated with immediate effect

Tears filled my eyes..

Manager: Just sign please... You lucky the money was found in your locker, Or authorities would've been called

Area M: You will be paid for this month at the end of the month, Please state exactly why you are being let go



This was not right, Not right at all..

GABISILE

The cause of Evelyn's death was due to internal trauma. She was also sexually violated..

The cops haven't found the guys, Apparently they don't live here in the hood. The shack at ext 6, Belonged to a relative of one of them..

I truly don't understand what happened, Because I was also out of it. Before I passed out, Evelyn was there. I don't know what happened after that..

Evelyn was to be buried on Sunday.

My Mother still hated me for what happened,  
She keeps on asking why I was left.. Both of us  
should've died at least..

BARBIE

Ken: You not going to order something?

Me: Why did you invite me here?

Ken: To talk about what happened

Me: Exactly what's there to talk about?

Ken: What happened, Was to teach you a lesson

Me: I thought I was meant to stay away from you guys, And you stay away from me

Ken: You meant to stay away from Musa, But you carrying my child so I need to talk to you about that

Me: You don't have too.. I can look after my baby

Ken: Don't be stupid.. I am not abandoning my unborn baby. I wanna be present for every Dr's appointment and shit, I'll pay. We going to co-parent. I guess we'll be doing it in peace

His phone vibrated on the table..

He checked it..

Ken: Unfortunately I have to go, It's an emergency.. We'll have this conversation some other time

He put R300 on the table..

Ken: Incase you feel like ordering

He walked over to me, And kissed me on my forehead..

Ken: Take care of my child

## AMANDA (LIEUTENANT)

I was off today.. I took it upon myself to review my father's case..

I am Amanda, I am a lieutenant. My father passed on a while back, Together with my little Brother. They were tragically killed at home, Gunned down. No witnesses, No suspects..

My father was addicted to gambling and borrowing money from loan sharks. The loan shark he was owing, Was Kenzo. He often told me about him.. How dangerous he is...

Kenzo didn't recognize me because he doesn't know me. I grew up in Eastern Cape, My mother's side of the family.

I only came to Gauteng about 3 years ago,  
Through a transfer..

I occasionally saw my father, We had a broken  
relationship here and there but it was not right  
for him to be gunned down.

Captain Maurice is the dirtiest cop you could  
ever find, How he handled Kenzo yesterday  
showed that he is in his payroll..

My first suspect is Kenzo, Doing my own  
research led to him. I just need proof..

MUSA

I was waiting for Ken, My heart was still heavy..

Thandeka: I feel like you were being set up, The manager is dirty

Me: Why would she give me a job and set me up?  
It doesn't make sense

Thandeka: Well her Niece is looking for a job.  
Her learnership has ran it's course, So I think  
she set you up for that

Me: Woow!

Thandeka: Let me go back in before they  
suspect. Askies Sisi, Take heart

Me: Thank you

Ken arrived, I walked up to the car..

I got inside..

Ken: What happened? Why so early?

I burst out crying..

Ken: Hey.. Hey.. Come here.. What happened?

He hugged me..

Ken: Talk to me.. What happened?



Me: I got fired

Ken: Why?

Me: They said I stole money

Ken: Wtf??

Me: I didn't steal

Ken: Of course you didn't, That's unfair.. Do you wanna take them to the CCMA? For unfair dismissal?

Me: No.. They will stand on their story, I'm going to lose. Apparently my manager's Niece needs a job.. How am I going to find a job, It was hard

finding this one

Ken: It's going to be okay, In the meantime I'll help you and Sedi

I wiped my tears..

Ken: I'm so sorry Babe, It's going to be okay

Me: This is bad

Ken: Don't worry.. These things happen, It's life..  
Let's go, I'll take you home

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

41

MUSA

I saw the great influence that Ken has today. How the other officer just came and settled the matter? It also taught me a lesson. People can be sleek. Barbie actually opening a case against me, After she was the one who actually threw sly comments my way. Provoking me to act in that matter.

This was stressful, A lot was happening to me. A lot that I'm not happy about and that I don't understand..

We were sitting at the table eating Lasagne.

Aneni had prepared it..

The was tension, After all Kurai and I. Things aren't jamming at all.. Ken was feeding Sedi who was sitting on his lap..

Ken: For crying out loud, Can you guys fix it?

We looked at each other..

Me: Kurai I'm sorry.. I shouldn't have done what I did, It was wrong. I trusted someone else with privileged information. If you check the screenshots, I didn't say anything evil. I just stated that you were thinking abortion and I didn't know what to do, Incase Ken found out. I was seeking advice, But it's not right. My deepest Apologies

Kurai: I hear you, Forgiven but I cannot trust you anymore. It's going to take a while

Me: I understand

Ken: Now the tension can stop

We continued eating..

[AFTER 5MIN]

Kurai: Ohh my word

We looked at her..

Kurai: Barbie is trending, She got arrested.  
Apparently she threw a fit at the police station  
when she was brought in

Ken: We know.. We the ones who had her  
arrested, She came here last night and attacked  
Musa

Kurai smiled..

Kurai: I will lift off the grudge I have for you,  
Now we even. This bitch almost costed me my  
reputation

Me: It was messy I tell you

GABISILE

My Mom and I, Were called to report to ext 6. A body of a woman was found, Abandoned in a Bush and someone who knows us suspected it's Evelyn..

We made our way there, And indeed it was her. My sister was in a bad state. Naked, Face badly bruised..

My Mom grabbed me by my clothes and threw me down....

Mom: This is your fault, You know that right? Why did you come back and Evelyn didn't? You sold her!

Me: I didn't!!

Mom: Then what happened? What happened last night?

I looked at her as she let go of me..

BARBIE

Lieutenant Amanda she came through, I walked up to her.. I held the bars..

Me: This is not right, What happened?

Amanda: Apparently the guy, Knows people who know people in high places. This is why you here



Me: This is wrong! Musa attacked me, Almost killed me! I am pregnant, I brought in proof how the hell am I here and not her?

Amanda: Apparently you attacked her too

Me: I didn't!! (shouting)

She looked around..

Me: What happens now?

Amanda: You going down for attempted murder,  
That's like 15 years

Me: No ways! I can't have my baby behind bars

Amanda: The on-

Voice: The only way out is for you to drop the charges and she does too.. Hi, I'm detective Maurice the captain of the station and I am in charge of the case now

Amanda left..

Me: This is not right

Mau: She provided concrete proof, A bruised neck and the witness collaborated her story, It's truly not looking good for you

Me: Fine, I'll.. I'll drop the charge

Mau: She has also requested a restraining order against you, I won't grant it but stay away from her

By the way he was talking, It was pretty clear that he was bribed..

Mau: Good.. Thank you for your understanding, Lieutenant will see you out

MUSA

Ken walked up to me in the kitchen as I was washing dishes....

He hugged me from the back, With his chin

resting on my shoulder..

Ken: Let's get married

Me: Huh?

Ken: Why should we wait?

I turned and looked at him..

Ken: I can pay lobola and we will see a white wedding later

Me: I.. Isn't it too soon?

Ken: What's too soon?

He picked me up and placed me on the counter..

Ken: It was going to happen eventually

Me: Pakiso, My Mother's house. I don't trust him

Ken: So you were set to stay there forever? He has to man up now and take charge of the house

Me: I guess so

Ken: So you saying we can go ahead?

Me: Yes.. We can

He kissed me..

BARBIE

Amanda: Just let it go please

Me: I don't wanna

Amanda: Pushing will do nothing but put you in more danger, Let it go.. Trust me

I nodded..

Amanda: Good

## GABISILE

We waited for her to be taken away, Autopsy should be done to find out what happened. I told the cops everything that I knew about what happened last night. Gave him the names of the guy. Gave him all the information that I knew of..

When everything was done, And she was taken away..

We headed back home..

My Mother being grieve stricken was very surprising. Considering how she treated us, And what she said this morning..

She was really coming off as a hypocrite..

We called our family to inform them about the unfortunate event..

I didn't know how to feel, I was blaming myself and also in shock..

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

43

MUSA

We fetched Sedi, Then he drove us straight



home..

I sat Pakiso and Thuli down, To tell them what happened..

Me: I lost my job today, So things are going to be difficult. Everyone should contribute now, Everyone needs to hustle. We all need to contribute

Pakiso: Kanti Ken is not helping you financially?

Me: Really?

Pakiso: I don't understand.. Why date if your boyfriend isn't giving you money. You too Thuli, You guys are girls. Should be easy getting

money

Me: Pakiso uRight engcondweni? (Are you okay in the head)

Pakiso: I'm just asking

Me: I know but are you okay in the head? Which part of what you've just said makes sense to you?

Pakiso: Ahh

He got up and walked out..

Thuli: Pakiso was spoiled a lot by Aunty, That's why he feels so entitled

Me: I'm in for a long run with this guy

GABISILE

Mom: When all this is over, I want you to pack your shit and leave my house

Me: Ma!

Mom: Ungivile? (Did you hear me)

Me: Where will I go?

Mom: I don't know, I don't care.. Don't you have like a rich boyfriend? Go stay with him

Me: You can't do this, What happened to Evelyn was not my fault

Mom: It was your fault!! At least Evelyn used to contribute around here, You contribute nothing. You just a burden

Me: How can you be so evil?

Mom: Am I now? Am I now? This is my house don't forget that and I want you out after your sister's burial

My mother was being unfair. Acting like what happened to Evelyn was my fault.. It wasn't my fault..

MUSA

I was sitting outside on the stoep with Lesedi playing. I kept on thinking about Ken's proposal. Between everything happening and Pakiso being an Ass, I feel my home won't be a good and healthy environment anymore. Plus, How many guys would actually propose to you? It might be a blessing from my mother's passing..

I also have to think of Lesedi..

Finding another job will definitely take a while,  
But I'll keep on trying..

I called my Aunt. Thuli's Mom..

I told her about the proposal..

Aunt: That's lovely Musa, At least he respects you enough to actually wanna do the right thing. I don't see that happening with your generation, You guys love to cohabituate a lot

Me: So it's okay? Especially since we haven't done the cleansing

Aunt: You can't wait forever. Plus we don't have money for a cleansing. Your lobola money, We can actually do the cleansing and then put a tombstone for your Mom. Maybe these blessings came with her

Me: So Ken can actually send a letter for next

weekend?

Aunt: Yes.. I'll inform your Uncle

Me: Thank you Aunty

Aunt: Menzi has to be informed too

Me: Hell no. I don't want him anywhere near my negotiations, He's made it clear we not family

Aunt: Just inform him. If he doesn't wanna be a part of it then it's okay

Me: I'll text him

Aunt: Okay Sisi

I hung up and texted Ken that we can have the negotiations..

KEN

I smiled and put my phone away....

Mom: What's got you smiling.. Your turn

I played..

Mom: That's a good hand

Me: I'm paying lobola next weekend



Mom: Wow.. That's good

Me: She finally said yes

Mom: I'm happy for you, Wish I could've met her before the negotiations

Me: You can't meet her if you dead

Mom: You still pushing that narrative?

Me: I can't undo the lie now can I?

Mom: I understand Son, Just happy we are talking

I played..

Me: Your turn

Mom: Okay

She played..

MUSA

I can't really go to Gabisile's house since our fight even though I want too. I won't even go to the funeral, Not prepared for the drama or actually starting nothing..

I deeply sympathize with her. Losing a loved one is not easy, I hope they find strength..

Ken texted me that next weekend it is..

I admired my mom's house for the last time, I wish not to move but growth forces me too..

My whole entire future is not enveloped in this house, Toxic and unhealthy..

It's time I start my own life and secure my future and my Daughter's future..

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

## MUSA

Losing my job made life a bit unbearable for the next coming days. Things at home were no longer peaceful. Pakiso and I were constantly fighting, He wasn't respectful towards me anymore and his sexual affair with uThuli was getting serious now..

Felt like my whole world was crashing down on me, The only thing that was going well was my relationship with Ken. I even started drinking wine more frequently to deal with the daily struggles of my life of which Ken truly hates..

It was a Monday morning, The week of what

was meant for my lobola negotiations to start..  
Ken has postponed them since I was under a lot  
of stress...

I was busy doing my laundry and Sedi's  
laundry... Sedi was playing outside..

I was having a couple of glasses of wine as I  
did the laundry..

Thuli: Good morning

Me: Morning

She went inside the house with her friend. They  
were from Pakiso's room...

Me: Sedi, Don't play in the mud

She wiped her hands...

RUTH (NEW CHARACTER)

I was walking home from buying bread...

I stay with my Grandmother only at home. My parents passed on and my siblings are working. I'm the youngest, I'm 20 years old.

As I was walking I saw this car approach me, Very familiar. I've seen it around here a couple of times. It slowed down, He rolled down the window..

Him: Ekse

Me: Hi

Him: You can get in, I'll drop you off at home

Me: It's okay I'm almost at home

He kept quiet for a while but still driving next to me..

Him: Ken

Me: Ruth

Ken: Umuhle yezwa Ruth (You beautiful)

Me: Thank you

Ken: Uziphathe kahle (Take care of yourself)

Me: I will

He took off..

I don't trust guys like him, They tend to be dangerous players and might possibly even be sick..

MUSA

Thuli and her friend walked out..



I continued doing laundry for the next couple of minutes, Saw that my glass is empty. I walked back into the house to pour wine, I noticed that my phone was no longer next to the wine glass. I searched for it and searched for it, I couldn't find it..

I panicked at the thought of Thuli and her friend stealing my phone. I locked the house, Picked Lesedi up and went out to check them. They weren't around..

I walked straight to the Pub & grill..

GABISILE

Evelyn had a beautiful funeral... All the people

that loved her attended..

I made the soft porridge for Mom. After Evelyn's funeral she wasn't doing okay anymore..

Mom: Thank you

Me: If you need anything, Do call out to me

Mom: Okay

Lately I've been thinking about fixing it with Musa. All that has happened between us, I wanna apologize and we fix it..

Honestly speaking I was missing my best friend....

MUSA

I waited for Ken at the Pub until he arrived..

Sedi ran up to him. He picked her up and kissed her on her chick. He came to me..

Ken: I was about to pass by at your place

He leaned over and tried to kiss me, But stopped halfway..

He clenched his Jaws..

Ken: It's 9am Musa

Me: I was doing my laundry, Had a glass to gain a bit of strength kill me then

Ken: Are you sure it's just one glass?

Me: Ken I'm stressed out please cut me some slack

Ken: What's wrong?

Me: I think my cousin stole my phone right inside the house

Ken: Thuli?

Me: Yes

Ken: How can she not do that when you too drunk to look after your things?

Me: It was inside the house

Ken: Why didn't you put it in your bedroom or something baby?

Me: I never thought she could.. I live with Pakiso and recently he hasn't stolen from me, I didn't think Thuli out of all people would steal from me!.. Not after everything that we've done for her

Ken: God change then, We'll go get you a new

one and have the old one blocked. Mina no  
Thuli sizoyiqeda (Me and Thuli we'll talk)

Me: Okay

I tried taking Lesedi, She didn't want..

Ken: It's okay, You'll find us here

He kissed me..

Ken: I love you

Me: I love you too

.

To be continued

# THE NARCISSIST

45

KENZO

I was still waiting for Musa, As Sedi was eating I called one of my staff. Sabelo..

Sabs: Boss?

Me: I was by your hood a few minutes ago, I saw this girl. Ruth I believe?

Sabs: Yeah uRuth

Me: Sithini iStory sakhe?

Sabs: Akanaso. Lives with her Grandmother, Parents died. Siblings don't live there, They working. Umntwana oGrand. Spends most of her time indoors

Me: So she doesn't have someone?

Sabs: Not that I know of.. Nex

Me: Sharp.. Ung'gadele yena (Keep an eye on her for me)

Sabs: No stress

RUTH



I was chilling with my friend, Jabu. Short for Jabulile.. I was telling her about the guy who greeted me this morning..

Me: His name is Ken, Do you know him?

Jabu: I know only one Ken, He owns a pub in the other hood

Me: Really?

Jabu: Yeah.. Pretty financial stable dude

Me: Is he with someone?

Jabu: I don't know much about his life, Sabelo works there. I just know him in passing

Me: The pub Sabelo works at?

Jabu: Yaa.. Is he having an interest in you?

Me: He just greeted me, Asked to drive me home. My name you know the works, But I don't trust his type

Jabu: Why?

Me: He was driving a TSI. Guys with such cars have a history you know? He probably has a queue of baby Mamas, Sidechicks, A wife and could be sick too

Jabu: Well that's not too far fetched, If I didn't mess with the ones driving ama GTI and Gushegushe back in high school. I wouldn't be on ARVs now

Me: You are taking good care of yourself by the way

Jabu: I try.. So what you going to do? If we thinking what we thinking, He ain't leaving you alone you know that

Me: Aii we'll see

Jabu: Wena do you want him?

Me: I don't even know him

Jabu: Yaa eish, We can go to his pub if you want

Me: No thank you

MUSA

Gabi: Here's a glass of water

Me: Thank you

I rinsed my mouth..

Me: Should fucken stay away from wine

She flushed the toilet..

When I came back home, I found Gabi walking into the yard. She has come to apologize for what happened between us..

With all the stress I've been having, I am glad she found fault on what she did. I did apologize too..

Gabi: I can't believe Thuli stole your phone

Me: I can't believe my life is crumbling right in front of me

Gabi: It's okay.. You know how it is

I looked at her..

Me: I'm going to ask you something, I need your honesty

Gabi: Okay

Me: Did Ken rape you?

Gabi: No.. I made it all up to get back to you, I'm sorry

Me: That's a relief, I wouldn't feel comfortable dating a rapist

Gabi: I know

Me: I really don't feel well, And we were supposed to go out. May you borrow me your phone. I wanna call him so he brings Sedi back

Gabi: No problem

BARBIE

I was pacing up and down, He picked up..

Ken: Yeah?

Me: I'm aborting

Ken: Excuse me?

Me: I am going to abort

Ken: Grand sharp anifuni ukubona umuntu athulile? Mele umuntu ahlanye (You don't wanna see me peaceful, I must be crazy all the time)

Me: I am aborting and I don't want nothing to do with you

Ken: Ohw, I forgot it's something you used too

Me: Bye Ken

I hung up..



MUSA

He picked up..

Ken: Hello?

Me: I am not feeling well, I'm even vomiting.  
Please bring Sedi to my house. I'm going to lie  
down a bit

Ken: What's wrong?

"Tell him to bring along a pregnancy test"

Gabi whispered..

Me: Wait what?? A pregnancy test?

Ken: You pregnant?

Me: I.. Bring along a pregnancy test when you come to drop Sedi off

I hung up..

Me: Ohh my God!!

Gabi: It could be the wine though too

Me: Ohh my God!!

.

To be continued

## THE NARCISSIST

46

MUSA

Ken did bring along two pregnancy tests. He had also bought me a new phone. Gabi had left by now...

The reality of the whole situation was that indeed I was pregnant....

The pregnancy tests came back positive, My heart sank.. I felt defeated but also blamed myself whole heartedly for the incident..

It wasn't raining in my life, It was pouring..

I sat down on the couch, My mind was clouded.  
I felt like the biggest failure in humanity, Like a  
cloud of bad luck was hovering over my head.  
I've had nothing but a string of bad luck  
following me lately and I didn't know what to  
do... With how my life is going, There's no way  
that I can keep this baby..

RUTH

Me: Only buy flour?

Grams: There's a sale at shoprite. Maize meal,  
Flour, Sugar, Rice and cooking oil. You won't be  
able to carry that alone, I'll come with

Me: Jabu will accompany me

Jabu: Yes I will

Grams: Okay here's my card.. You guys can have R200 for yourselves

Me: Thank you Grams

Grams: Here's R50 for taxi fare

Me: Okay we will be back soon, Unless it's full

Grams: Okay baby

MUSA

I set up the phone, With the new sim card.  
Pakiso walked in..

Pakiso: Gabi tells me that you looking for uThuli?  
She stole your phone?

Me: Yes.. As I was doing laundry outside

Pakiso: She says she knows nothing about that,  
Could be her friend

Me: She's making me stupid now!, If her friend  
did. There's no way Thuli doesn't know, They  
going to sell it together and share the money.. I  
don't want her back here anymore

Pakiso: But here you got a new phone, Maybe learn to take care of your things better. She has nowhere to go

Me: I don't care Pakiso, Why are you even defending her?

Pakiso: I'm not. She says she didn't take it, Could be her friend. She's our cousin, She has nowhere to go. Have some mercy

Me: Leave me alone please.. You giving me a headache!

KEN

Mpendulo: Manje Ntwana, Wena phela awuzi ngapha.. Z'khipha boma what? (You never come here, Why today)

I was in Ruth's hood, Same street as hers.  
There's a guy at the corner who sells food..

Me: Kunini ngizwa ngale shandis lakho kuthi lithengisa inyama yentloko emnandi, Was time I come and try it

Mpendulo: Ayikho inyama ye ntloko eTk? (They don't sell a goat's head in Tk)

Me: Flaaat!!

I saw Ruth walking to the main road, She was



with some girl..

They waited for a taxi, It stopped and they got in..

Me: Tshela mina.. Ama Taxi aya le, Most of the time ayaphi? (Tell me, Taxis taking that route are going where)

Mpendulo: TK mall

Me: Wola eyami

I paid extra for my food..

Mpendulo glanced at my plate..

Mpendulo: Takeaway?

Me: Naa ngi grand

Mpendulo: Entlek.. I know you Ken, Zokwenzani ngapha? (What exactly are you doing here)

I wiped my hands..

Me: I told you that I wanted to try your plate out, It's delicious by the way

She shook his head..

Me: Sajika eTk Mall

Mpendulo: Sharp eyam

MUSA

I went to buy airtime, Uploaded it and then called Ken..

Ken: Hello

Me: It's me, I just activated the phone

Ken: Okay.. Hang up let me call you back

I hung up.. He called me back..

Me: Hello

Ken: What did it say? The pregnancy test?

I took a deep breath..

Me: I'm pregnant

He paused for a while..

Ken: Manje wena uthini? (What's your decision)

Me: I don't know, But with everything that's happening. I might consider abortion

Ken: Akuna abortion nex, Thatha Lesedi. You

guys will stay with me from now on until you give birth

Me: Ken

Ken: It's just up until you deliver safely. With all the stress there, I don't want any complications

Me: I think abortion is the solution

Ken: Kanti yini ngama abortion? You and Barbie are stressing me out. She wants an abortion, You want one too. Mele mina ngihlanye kqala so you guys can take me seriously

Me: Let me lie down a little

Ken: Pack your things and Sedi's things. I'll come fetch you guys later.. I love you, Bye

He hung up...

RUTH

We got off at the gate and walked inside..

Jabu: At least your Grandmother is sweet. My Mother would actually send us, Just give us money for taxi fare and that's it

Me: My Grandmother feels bad sending me to the mall without at least giving me money to buy something

Jabu: Old people are nice

Me: And most are very generous, Plus the things she sent us to buy are heavy

Jabu: Let's not forget how full shoprite gets

We withdrew our R200 first, Then went to shoprite. It was indeed full, So we joined the queue..

KEN

When I had left, Their taxi was still making stops, Picking other passengers up. That helped me to be ahead of them. Park and walk up a little to monitor the entrance. I did see

them walking in, They started at the Atm then after went inside to shoprite..

I followed them from a distance, I don't think they saw me because they were busy talking. They went inside, I still followed them. Picked up a hamper, Put it in the trolley and went to join the queue. The Queues were long, I checked for a restaurant that wasn't too full. It was Nandos. I went and bought them a full chicken, Rolls, Chips and drinks. Then went to kfc to buy them dunked wings. For some reason girls love that shit..

I then went back to my car and tried to find a parking spot much closer to the entrance so I can see them when they walk out..

I called Musa as I was waiting in the car for



them and the orders..

Musa: Hello?

Me: What do you and Sedi wanna eat?

Musa: I don't know, I'm sleeping

Me: I thought we agreed that you were packing

Musa: I'm not p-

Me: Dammit Musa!!.. Kanti yini? Can't you just do something without us fighting?

Musa: If you going to yell and scream, I'm

hanging up

She hung up..

I sent her text:

"Fede sharp. I'll stop by there, Awuhlali eUSA"

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

48

RUTH

He kept stealing glances at us from the rare

view mirror, Should I say he kept stealing glances at me. It made me nervous, Nervous that I couldn't down the food he gave us. It was bad because dunked wings are my favorite, I have been since holding one trying to eat it. Molding my lips, Monitoring my biting and chewing..

Jabu didn't care, She was going for it. One wing became two with her, Until we got to the hood..

Ken cleared his throat..

Ken: Should I drop you off at the corner or gate?

Jabu: Gate, We'll say you a Bolt guy

Ken: Ruth?

I coughed a little..

Me: Gate

Jabu: The house with the wall brick and black gates

Ken: Okay

GABI

I got there faster than the speed of lightning. Exactly when I walked in I was already on the phone. I had called the emergency number 112..

I saw the trail of blood from the kitchen door,  
Leading to her Mother's bedroom..

Also Lesedi's crying guided..

Me: Ohh my Good.. Please hurry

I gave them the address..

Me: She's bleeding really bad, Please hurry

I was fighting back my tears.. She was laying on  
her stomach. Her face on her right arm, Her t-  
shirt bloody from her back. Her phone was  
close to her..

I knelt down next to her after the call. I lifted her t-shirt up and blood was oozing from her back..

I know Musa and I, Things weren't quite custard and jelly a while back but.. Seeing her like this, Tore me deep inside. It scared me too..

Me: Musa

I didn't wanna move her..

Me: Dammit

I took Sedi's towel on the bed and pressed it on her back hoping to stop the bleeding.

She moved a little, Tears were streaming down

my cheeks..

Me: God please

Lesedi came and cried next to me with her forehead pressed against my arm. She even had hiccups..

Me: It's okay, It's okay baby

I just needed the Ambulance to get here..

KEN

They got the things off, Even took the food with. I didn't come out, I was the "Bolt" guy.

They came to the passenger's window to thank me..

Me: Well can the bolt guy get your numbers?  
Incase you get stuck at the mall again?

She looked at her friend. I hate that she needs approval from her friend, But I guess that's how girls are because Musa was also like this..

I unlocked my phone and handed it to her, She put her number. I took it back, Her Grandmother walked out right when I had saved it..

Ruth: You have to go



Me: I'll call you

I drove off and left them there, With a smile on my face. My smile disappeared when I thought of Musa and the fight that we going to have. I decided to call her. She didn't pick up, I called her again. Gabi picked up..

Gabi: Ken

Me: Gabi? Where is Musa?

Gabi: Where are you? Musa has been stabbed, She's bleeding to death

Me: What the fuck are you talking about?

Gabi: Pakis.. Her brother.. He sta..

Me: Where... Where are you?

Gabi: At her house waiting for an Ambulance..  
It's taking long Ken, She's going to die

I heard Sedi crying..

I hung up the phone and it slipped falling on my  
lap.. I hit the wheel..

Me: I'm going to kill him!!.. I'm going to fucken  
kill him!!

I raced to her place with my heart beating fast. I  
was scared and angry at the same time..

RUTH

Grams: Who was that?

Me: Bolt driver Koko

Grams: Yini kona lokho? (What is that)

Me: Cars that you request, Then they get you from anywhere and bring you home

Grams: Isn't that expensive?

Jabu: Chaa.. From the mall it's cheap

Me: Jabu and I bought food koko

Grams: That's nice..

Me: I'll dish up

Grams: Siyabonga phela Ruth (Thank you Ruth)

She walked to the living room..

Jabu: Ken wants you

Me: Ken is gangster. Did you see how he looked at the guy at the mall? That scared me

Jabu: Gangsters so long you don't cheat on

them, They won't hurt you

Me: Really?

Jabu: Yes.. They make really good boyfriends

Me: What if he has a girlfriend?

Jabu: Then that's good. A girlfriend is not a wife  
Sweetie, She will stick in her lane. You stick to  
yours.. Simple

Me: I don't know

Jabu: You better know, Because guys like him  
they don't give up easily

KEN

I parked at the gate, Went out of the car and ran inside. Even left the key in the ignition..

From the kitchen, I saw a trail of blood that was drying up, I followed it and Gabi had her hands against Musa's back. The towel was bloody too..

Me: No.. No.. No.. No.. No!!!!!!

Gabi lifted her eyes from Musa to me, She was trembling..

Gabi: She's not Mo.. She's not moving

Lesedi was sitting down next to Gabi, Busy dozing off on Gabi's arm..

My heart sank, My mind froze like the north pole. If there were times when I thought I loved this girl, I probably was lying to myself because at this very moment I realized just how much I loved her. I wasn't mad, I wasn't hurt, I was scared. Scared that I was going to lose her. I bent a little to breathe, Bringing my hands to my knees. Fighting back tears.

Gabi: Ken what do we do? What do we do?

I stood up straight as tears fell. I wiped my face..

Me: Okay.. Okay.. Go open the back door, Take Sedi with you. We taking her to the hospital

Gabi moved her hands, She took Lesedi and rushed out..

I touched Musa, Trying to feel her pulse. I didn't know if it was Mine I was feeling or hers. I quickly picked her up, Her eyes were half opened. I rushed outside with her, Gabi was sitting at the front with Sedi. I placed Musa at the back, Closed the door and went to the front..

I looked at my hands, My t-shirt, and my jeans. They were bloody..

Gabi: Ken let's go!!

I can't even communicate my feelings right now, I'm not a man of many words with God but the



fear that I felt deep Inside, Made my heart ache..

I kept my prayer short:

"God please, Don't break my heart"

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

47

RUTH

My feet were aching from standing in the queue that long. My back wasn't short of disappointment too. Ontop of that, My throat

was dry even my constantly swallowing my saliva didn't help quench the thirst from my throat..

The walk out of the supermarket to the taxi rank, Knowing very well that the taxi was going to drop us off at the corner of the street depressed me. Jabu and I, Were gonna have to rely heavily on our partially exhausted strength to carry the hamper from the corner of the street to my house..

I didn't have the energy nor interest to pass by anywhere and grab a quick snack, The mall was full. Checking the date, It was the 25th of the month. Some people got paid..

By a stroke of luck, I saw masculine hands holding the trolley. I was pushing it. I didn't have

time to look around, I only looked at the way. I thought it was one of the nyoape boys from the mall, They were going to help push the trolley for us up until to the taxi. Only when I rose my head up, Following the masculine hand. All the way up to his arm with his veins clearly on display, The face betrayed me. It was Ken. I should've suspected it was someone else, Other than the nyoape boys because the scent of his cologne was definitely one that the boys wouldn't afford..

Just by his hand, His one hand. He was able to bring the trolley into a stop..

Last encounter was me seeing him in the car, I was now seeing him up close..

Above everything else he has beautiful eyes,

Downward slanting eyes. More like he was lazy to open them wider. They went well with the frown on his forehead..

Ken: Ladies

Jabu and I looked at each other, Then we looked at him..

Ken: I was just about to go home, Noticed you two walking. Couldn't help think that you might need a ride

He wasn't afraid to stare deep into your eyes, Which made me shy. I'm not one to prolong an eye contact..

Jabu: Uhm.. Yaa sure I guess we could use a ride b.. Back to the hood

He looked at me for approval.. I nodded..

He looked at my hands on the trolley..

Ken: May I?

I moved my hands from the trolley and moved away. He turned it some guy accidentally bumped into it. Ken stopped and looked directly into his eyes, The guy was eating a pie busy chit chatting with a friend to notice the trolley. I saw Ken's Jaws clenching and his grip on the trolley tightening. The guy definitely got the message..

Guy: Hade bhoza

Ken actually turned back and looked at them walking away, He then faced his front and started pushing the trolley shaking his head..

We followed him, Jabu looked at me and widened her eyes with her mouth wide open..

Jabu: Wooow!! (whispering)

MUSA

I tried to sleep but I couldn't, Sedi was sleeping..

I dragged my feet to the kitchen to drink a glass of water when I heard voices outside.

I walked out, It was Thuli and Pakiso..

Me: Thuli where's my phone?

Thuli: I swear I didn't take it Sisi, Why would I do that to you?

Me: What makes me angry is that you lying to my face

Thuli: Why would I do that to you, When you've done so much for me? It wasn't me

Pakiso: She thinks it's her friend

Me: Thuli stop making me a fool!!!

Pakiso: She is not

Me: Why are you defending her?

Pakiso: I'm not defending her, Wena you just want it to be her!

Me: Thuli must leave, I shall not live with a thief

Pakiso: Awukahle Musa

Me: Pakiso shut the fuck up, I'm not even talking to you. You a traitor! Instead of defending your own sister, You defending a thief!! Is it because you sleeping with her?



Without any warning, Pakiso jumped me. He slapped me, I staggered back..

Thuli: Pakiso!!

That infuriated me, I picked up the closest brick and threw it at him. He was able to dodge it and it hit Thuli on the shoulder..

Thuli: Awwwwwwww!!!

Pakiso: Entlek wena skhathele wuwe! (we tired of you)

Pakiso drew out his pocket knife.. I tried running back inside the house, I tripped and fell.

I fell on my stomach. Before I could even think of getting up, I felt a sting on my back twice..

Thuli: Pakiso stop!! You'll go to jail

He stabbed me again on my back, I was screaming and I think Thuli pulled him off because as I crawled to the bedroom I heard their voices slowly disappearing..

KEN

They were both sitting at the back, Groceries in the trunk..

Me: I bought food, You guys can eat

I noticed that they were shy, But got a relief when I heard the noise of the package..

I smiled a little looking out of the window when my phone rang. It was on the passengers seat. I took it, It was Musa. I exhaled and canceled the call..

I threw the phone on the seat again, I wasn't ready for a fight. At least not right now..

GABI

I was busy washing dishes when my phone rang. I wiped my hands and checked, I didn't recognize the number but answered anyway..

Me: Hello?

Musa: Gabi it's Musa!! I've been stabbed!! I'm bleeding out and in pain!! (crying)

Me: What?

I heard Sedi crying in the background..

Musa: Pakiso stabbed me!!.. I'm dying Gabi (crying)

Me: Musa where are you?

Musa: I'm home.. I'm dying.. I'm really dying (crying)

Me: Hold on I'm coming!!

I hung up and my mind froze at that instant. I rushed out with my sleepers falling off, I didn't care..

I rushed out to her house whilst dialing 112..

What has Pakiso done? What happened? Does he know Ken??

.

To be continued

We gonna need to work through the loadshedding saga, Telkom network is shit this side

Continuation to follow

## THE NARCISSIST

49

KEN

I had to call Kurai to come fetch Sedi and Gabi, Seeing I was going to be here for a while. It's been 3 hours now, Gabi looked exhausted and still off it. Sedi too..

Kurai was to pass by at Musa's house with Gabi and Sedi to get their things, Then the two will proceed to the house. I had called Ace to track down Pakiso. Kurai called me and told me that

the only Person who was at the house was the female cousin, I kept in contact with them for their safety up until they reached home..

I only washed the blood from my hands, 4 hours passed and 5 hours with Musa still in surgery..

I kept on drinking water, Rubbing my hands together in the waiting room. I was scared, And worried..

Ace walked in..

I stood up..

Ace: How is she?

Me: She's still in surgery

I looked at him, With desperation in my eyes. He knew exactly the statement I awaited. He took off his hand..

Ace: I haven't found him

I bit my lower lip in frustration..

Ace: But I'll find him, I've sent word

I nodded repeatedly..

Ace: Kurai and Sedi also made it home safe



Me: Thank you Ntwana

He pat me on the shoulder..

Ace: I'll call you

He walked away. My phone beeped. I took it out and checked, It was a whatsapp message....

I opened it, Barbie had sent me a disturbing picture of her abortion. Sent me what's meant to be our baby to show me that she actually did it..

I walked slowly to the chairs and sat down..

GABI

I was still feeling down with regards to what happened to Musa. My heart went out to her, I even prayed for her..

Mom: Haicha, Why would Pakiso do such a thing?

Me: Pakiso has always been troubling uMusa

Mom: Poor thing. Mawakhe ceda ukushona  
(Her mom passed on not so long ago)

Me: Kubi (It's bad)

Mom: You did well, Now we just have to pray for her safety

Me: I wish she has him arrested

Mom: Me too

KEN

If it was up to me and not the urgency of the situation, I would've taken her to a private hospital. I couldn't, We needed to take her to the closest hospital..

The Dr finally made his way to me, I stood up and rubbed my hands against my Jean..

Dr: She's critical but stable

I exhaled..

Dr: The excessive bleeding was caused by the wound on her side, Just slightly closer to her stomach. She was stabbed twice on her back and on her side, The wounds were pretty deep

Me: But she's going to be fine?

Dr: She's stable.. You'll be happy to know that the baby is also fine. No bleeding from her intimate area, She's lucky she's in her first trimester. If she was on her second and third, The wound on her side. The knife would've definitely pierced through

That was a relief, The was hope..

Me: Can I see her?

Dr: Eerr I don't think it's a good idea, She's still critical any external s-

Me: I won't trouble her.. I swear. I don't want her waking up and being scared when she doesn't see anyone around her. Is she sharing her ward?

Dr: No.. She's not, It's better that way. When she picks up, We will move her

Me: Thank you so much

Dr: The Nurse will take you to her, I'll get the Nurse

Me: Thank you.. Thank you so much

BARBIE

I ate the fruit salad..

I was still in pain..

My cousin walked in..

Cuz: Hey Cuz

Me: Cuz

She hugged me..

Cuz: How are you holding up?

Me: I am still in pain

Cuz: I'm sorry.. When are they discharging you?

Me: Tomorrow

She sat down..

Cuz: What did Ken say? Did you tell him?

Me: He blocked me, After sending him the picture. Said nothing

Cuz: You sent him a picture? They allowed you?

Me: Yaa

Cuz: You seem disappointed?

Me: A bit. Thought about now, He would've stormed in and gave me hell. You know, To show he cares

Cuz: Well you wanted him to back off

Me: I know.. I guess he's really moved on and he really loves that raggedy ass girl

Cuz: And you need to move on too



KEN

She was laying on her side, With a pipe in her mouth. They had bandaged her upper body. I pulled the mini bench and sat down looking at her..

She's been through a lot lately, She's known no peace and I just want her to make it. Make it so I can start showing her the better side of life..

I held her hand. I blamed myself, If I didn't cancel that call. I probably would've shown up on time and saved her..

I put her hand in between mine, Then kissed it..

My eyes filled up with tears. Just wanted to know how she was feeling, If she hates me for not being there on time..

Me: I'm so sorry

Tears streamed down cheeks... Her hand still in my tight grip. I was tapping it against my lips..

Me: I know that I haven't been.. I love you so much and I don't think I'll be able to do this life thing without you. We appear toxic but the honest truth of it all is that you my mirror, You just like me. I have never met a woman so strong, Who can stand her ground and knows exactly what she wants. I love you so much and I need you here with me

.

To be continued

No edits

THE NARCISSIST

50

RUTH

5 DAYS LATER

It was a Friday afternoon when Jabu and I made a stop at Ken's pub&grill. Ever since he took my number, He hasn't contacted me....

It made me feel bad because I thought he was

into me, Nigga had approached me twice!..

They were having some event there tomorrow, They'll be having some few artists come perform. R250 general ticket and R350 VIP ticket including meet and greet..

When they talked about his Pub&grill, I never imagined it as a big place. It took almost 3 yards but situated alone by the shops. A bit of a distance from the houses..

As we walked in, We were welcomed by a big poster about the event. We were just going to have ribs and chips plus drinks..

I wanted to see him, I was hoping he was there..

I saw a Mercedes Benz parked. A45 AMG, It was charcoal and actually had his name as his number plate..

Me: He's here

Jabu: Act cool

We walked inside and this place was a very sophisticated for the hood. It was beautiful.

We got ourselves a table, A waitress came to us..

Waitress: Hi

Us: Hi

It wasn't full, Just a few guys drinking beer eating and watching soccer..

Waitress: Welcome to Ken's Pub&grill

She handed us the menus..

Waitress: I'll be right back

Ken came out from the back, He was wearing formal. White shirt, Royal blue pants and shoes. He looked like someone who was going to an important meeting. His belt matched his shoes. His genuine leather watch straps were also Royal blue. The inside collar of his shirt was and the trimming of his shirt pocket at the front was also in a royal blue colour..

He didn't even look around. He stood by the balcony and took out his lip balm. He smeared it on his lips as the bartender gave him his car keys and phone..

Jabu: Ken!!

He stopped and turned looking at us, He just gave a slight wave and continued with his walk..

Me: I don't understand

Jabu: Me too

KURAI

Aneni: Here you go.. Ironed

Me: Thank you

Lesedi ran up to me..

Lesedi: Hi!!

Me: Hi baby

Lesedi: Hi!

Me: Hi

We've been looking after her since her mother had that incident. Aneni has been working



tirelessly the whole week in trying to help Lesedi's vocabulary by making her watch a lot of educational kiddies show. "Hi" is the very first word that's not gibberish that I hear coming her mouth..

She's such a sweetheart and kills my loneliness around the house. Ken has been only coming to bath, Eat and then return back to the hospital. He's been there ever since Musa was admitted..

I admire their relationship now, I haven't seen Ken actually loving someone like how he loves Musa..

I walked back to my bedroom to get dressed, Sedi and I were going to do a bit of shopping. Leave Aneni to focus on the house and cleaning for a while..

RUTH

I was hurt. Just when I was thinking of giving Ken a chance, He does this..

I walked up to Sabelo, he lives in my hood..

Sabz: Ruth.. What are you doing here?

Me: I came with Jabu, We wanted some ribs

Sabz: Nice.. You coming tomorrow?

Me: I don't know, I'll see

Sabz: Okay

I looked at him...

Sabz: Yeah?

Me: Does Ken have a girlfriend or a wife?

Sabz: Why?

Me: Just asking

Sabz: Why don't you ask him?

Me: I'm asking you Sabz.. Kanti yini manje?

Sabz: Hayi Makza I don't wanna lie I don't know.  
Mina I'm just focused on my work and nothing  
more, I don't really monitor his personal life

Me: Ohw

Sabz: But it's good to see you Makza

MUSA

I slowly opened my eyes. Ken was sitting there,  
His elbows on his knees and upper body leaning  
forward. He had his hands against his mouth,  
Both index fingers pressed against each other  
and his mouth.

He seemed to be deep in his thoughts..

The first thing I swore last night when I opened my eyes was his face, I was too out of it to hold a conversation with him last night when I woke up..

I was still feeling drowsy and my eyes were heavy to keep them open for far too long.

Me: It's not your fault

He moved his eyes from staring at the wall and looked at me...

I tried to keep my eyes open... He moved the bench closer to me. He kissed me on my forehead, Then my nose bridge before sitting down. He held my weak hand and our fingers

interlocked..

Ken: You still look tired and weak

With his other hand he cleaned the corners of my eyes and then went to brush my hair..

I was still laying on my side. I looked at him, I could see it deep in his eyes that he was exhausted..

Me: When was the last time you slept?

Ken: Last night, The Nurse actually brought me a chair. There by the corner

Me: They told me you've been here since from

day 1 and didn't wanna leave my side. They actually had to..

I took a deep breath..

Ken: Shhh.. Get some more rest

Me: How is Sedi?

Ken: Having the time of her life with Kurai, They best friends now. You can't separate them

I gave out a faint smile..

Me: You look good

Ken: You look good too, Gained some complexion I'm jealous

I tried to laugh but I was in pain..

Ken: Want some water?

Me: Yes please

He got up from the bench, Before letting go of my hand I forced a tight grip on him. He looked at me..

Ken: What's wrong?

Me: You didn't hurt him right? Pakiso.. You didn't hurt him?



Ken: Let's not talk about that

Me: Ken

I heard him exhaling..

Me: You didn't right?

Ken: He hurt you, Almost took you away from me

Me: Please don't hurt him

Ken: You asking me for the impossible

Me: He's still my brother, He just.. He has problems. An addiction and.. He's not at all violent

Ken: Baby

Me: He's my brother Ken

Ken: He's your brother, Not mine

I slowly closed my eyes..

Me: Just.. Don't hurt him

I felt his lips pressing against mine.. Then after his warm breath hitting against my lips..

Ken: I love you

Me: I love you too

.

To be continued

Network guys couldn't post yesterday

THE NARCISSIST

51

MUSA

Later on when I woke up, I had a bath. If I wanted to be out of here soon. I had to push

myself, So the Dr can discharge me.

It was painful, Depressing and frustrating getting out of bed with all the pain I was in. My legs were weak, I couldn't take more than 3 steps without needing the wheelchair and having to catch my breath. A very soft pillow had to put behind the wheelchair so I don't hurt my back..

Pakiso really did a number on me...

After bathing I felt a bit lighter, I sat up straight on the bed with my legs dangling. I wasn't leaning on anything..

Ken walked in holding some goodies and a big teddy bear...

He stopped in the middle of the room staring at me, With his head tilted to the back a little..

When he's upset he usually narrow his eyes..

Ken: Where's the Nurse?

Me: She went out

Ken: Should you even be sitting like that? Under no supervision?

Since he blames himself for what happened, I'm not going to hear the end of it..

Me: Come on

He walked up to me, Put the goodies next to me..

He gently put his hand around my waist and kissed me.. I put my hand on his chest..

Ken: You went through a traumatic experience and I don't want your healing process interrupted

Me: Ken sit down

He likes being dominant, He likes having everything under control. He's a bully, A Narcissist and controlling. He's all those things

but he does listen to me when I give an order from time to time, When I get dominant... He wouldn't let anyone else order him around, With me he listens to me sometimes..

He sat down parted my thighs a little, Putting his hands in between my thighs...

Me: I was thinking when I get discharged, Sedi and I can live with you in the meantime. Just until I h-

Ken: Not just "Until I heal", You guys are moving in period! Plus I already had your things transferred to my house

Me: You what?

I raised my hand up in defeat..

Me: Yazini.. I'm not even going to argue with you, I'm tired

He winked at me and gave me his side smile that was accompanied by biting his lower lip..

His phone rang.. He moved his hand from my thigh and took it out. Caller ID "ACE".

He furrowed his eyebrows..

Ken: I have to take this baby. I'll be right back

He stood up and pointed at the goodies..



Ken: I brought you some food, You can eat and I got you an iPhone

He walked out while answering his phone..

Ken: Talk to me!

I wondered what that was about..

GABI

I walked into the pub&grill to buy a ticket for tomorrow. Computicket was going to be a headache for me..

Me: One VIP ticket for tomorrow please and a long Island cocktail

Two girls were drinking at the bar, One was very tipsy. She kept on talking about Ken..

Her: Matter of fact, Sabz gimme more shooters and Ken will pay!

Friend: Stop it (laughing)

Her: What? He wants me and I know I gave him crap first but such guys don't usually hit on me.. I bet he also has a big dick!!

They both laughed..

My heart skipped a bit..

Me: Sabz forget about the cocktail, Please gimme the ticket only

I looked at her, She looked young. She looked like a teen..

MUSA

He walked back in..

Me: iPhone huh?

He came and sat down, Put his hands back in between my thighs..

Me: It's beautiful, And expensive. You shouldn't have, This is the second phone you buying. I was good even with a phone that costs 2k or 1k

Ken: It'll be easier for me to track you at all times

I looked at him..

Me: Ken what happened is not your fault, Pakiso and I got into an argument and it turned ugly

Ken: You called and I canceled the call

Me: Still it's not your fault

Ken: It is, If I answered I would've made it in time. The thought of losing you, Still terrifies me

Me: You always talk about losing me, Not the baby

Ken: We have Lesedi and we could've had more kids, But I can't have more of you

I smiled a little..

Me: I think I wanna lie down a little, My back hurts now

He helped me to lie down..

ACE

I tossed the bag..

Muddha: Where the fuck is Ken?

Me: Ken has an emergency right now, He couldn't make this meeting

He unwrapped the sweet and put it in his mouth busy nodding..

Muddha: Check it

One of his guys opened the bag and checked..

Guy: Looks solid

Muddha kicked the bag that was next to him to me. I walked up further but didn't cross the drawn line. I unzipped and took the small device. I checked the notes..

Muddha: Really?

Me: Well looks like it's all in there, All the 75k

Muddha: Send my regards to your Boss

Me: I will

I took the bag and texted Ken..

"I closed the deal"

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

53

GABISILE

Ace: Ngiyak'tshela (I'm telling you)

I laughed covering my mouth....

Me: Cha unamanga bo (You lying)

Ace is one of those guys that when you see on



the street you'd be intimidated by him. Not in a way that he's your typical untidy just crossing the road criminal, But his aura was intimidating. He had broad shoulders, Tattoos covering both his arms. He was wearing a a white cap, A white Adidas t-shirt. Navy blue Adidas pants with white stripes and white sneakers...

He wasn't light skinned which made his aura more intimidating and a bit of a deep voice.

He definitely hits the gym, Those shoulders and arms aren't naturally strong..

We were at Mugg & Bean...

Me: Chaa udlalile ngami (You played with me)

He had on iziphandla, 4 on each arm and brown in colour. When you see a man with that, You know that he's a hit man. Uyinkabi.

Me: Thank you for the lunch and the laugh

Ace: You did help me with my groceries so akuna stress

Me: So you've never done any groceries on your own?

Ace: My helper usually does that for me and also cook for me, She's not around so I'm forced

Me: Helper or wife?

He moved his eyes from his glass and looked at me, Not to intimidate me but just an unexpected question from me..

Ace: I don't have a wife

Me: Kids?

Ace: I don't have

Me: Why

He brought his hands together and interlocked his fingers..

Ace: Guys like me don't get married...

He looked at me..

Ace: Nor do they have kids

It was confirmed.. Uyinkabi (Hitman)

He checked his phone..

Ace: Muntu Omuhle, It's time for me to leave.  
Do you want me to drop you off?

Me: I don't trust you, You might kidnap me and  
sell me as a sex slave

Ace: Kid-

He chuckled..

Ace: If I want to kidnap you, Even the taxi you gonna ride won't stop me

Me: So you wanna kidnap me?

Ace: Sengiyasho nje (I'm just saying)

Me: I guess you can drop me off, Thank you again for iLunch and the washing soap

A call came through..

Ace: You can order a takeaway whilst I take this call

He moved his wallet to me, It was thick..

Ace: Since you think I'm going to kidnap you,  
And think I'm going out to leave you with the bill.  
Settle the bill

He took his phone and walked out..

I opened his wallet, He had a lot of R100 notes  
and a couple of R200 notes. I closed it and held  
it whilst looking for the waiter..

MUSA

Ken was sitting on the chair, Busy on his laptop. I thought he wasn't going to come today. He was concentrating hard, He had put it on the bed just in front of me. He was in deep concentration and asked me not to disturb him..

I cleared my throat..

He looked at me.. Then went back..

I cleared my throat again.. He looked at me..

Ken: You okay?

Me: I thought you'd be at the pub setting up etc

Ken: They have everything under control

Me: Okay

Ken: You trying to kick me out?

Me: Not really

Ken: Good.. Cause I'm not going anywhere

Me: I did wanna have some me time

Ken: Me time?

Me: Yes

Ken: You want me to go?



Me: Yes

Ken: I'm not even saying anything

Me: I just don't want you here, Just wanted some me time

Ken: Why? You wanna play with yourself?

I laughed..

Me: Really?

Ken: I mean, What is me time at the hospital?

I laughed again. He smiled and shook his head..

He gave me his hand, I held it..

Ken: Don't be disruptive

GABISILE

I might be the biggest floozy, But I know when not to cross the line and that is double crossing inkabi. I didn't pay but rather asked for the bill so he could pay..

He came back..

Me: Here's the bill, Combined with my takeaway

He sat down..

Ace: You didn't pay?

Me: Chaa (No)

I handed him back his wallet. He opened it and didn't even check his money. He just checked the bill, Took out a few notes and put them in..

Ace: Cela favour? (May you do me a favour)

Me: Okay?

Ace: May you please have breakfast, Lunch, Or

dinner with me everyday. Whichever one suits you best

Me: You serious?

Ace: Yes

Me: Uhm.. I don't know

Ace: Ngiyacela kodwa (I'm asking)

Me: Tonight I'm going to the event at the Pub..  
Wanna come?

Ace: Ken's pub?

Me: Yaa

Ace: It won't work for me, Angizihambi izindawo ezinjalo (I don't attend such places)

Me: Ohw

Ace: But..

He took out R400..

Ace: For food and alcohol

Me: Thank you

He moved his phone to me, That indicated him

asking for my numbers..

I put my numbers..

MUSA

We were now eating. Had food delivered for us..

Ken: I spoke to a physio therapist, Said at least until your wounds heal you can start physio

Me: Yazi I also did speak to one from this hospital, He said I can start in 2 weeks time or so. I can book

He shoved his plastic fork into his food..

Ken: So.. It's a he?

Me: Are you jealous?

Ken: Yes

Me: You are?

Ken: He gonna be touching you and all that, I don't think I'm comfortable with that

Me: You such a headache (laughing)

Ken: So we go with mine? She's closer to the house futhi

Me: As long as she can get me walking then it's cool

Ken: She will

Me: Come closer I wanna tell you something

He carefully put his food on the cabinet..

Me: With your food

He poked his tongue on the inside of his cheek and grabbed his food giving it to me..

Me: I just wanted to taste



Ken: Fede

I took his food, He opened his laptop and started working again..

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

52

MUSA

Hearing that at the pub&grill they were having an event today, Made me a bit happy. I was getting discharged on Monday morning and I wanted this Saturday to myself. Just be alone,

Think, Cry etc..

I didn't want Sedi brought here, She won't want to leave. She's going to cry and that's going to depress me more..

The Nurse saw that I wasn't okay today, She decided to wheel me out of the ward and outside. She wheeled me out a bit far where it was quiet and I could feel the breeze..

Nurse: I come here most of the time when I want my own space. When I wanna cry, And be alone with my feelings

Me: It's a calming spot

Nurse: Very

(Silence)

Nurse: You still alive, That should mean something right?

Me: I don't know.. Life gets hard sometimes

Nurse: Not sometimes.. All the time, I don't know if you a religious person but.. If things are too peaceful then there's something you doing wrong. If you get a turbulence that means there's something you doing right

My phone vibrated, It was Ken..

Me: Babe

Ken: Go back

Me: Sorry?

Ken: Either you dead and being moved to the hospital mortuary, But since you answered you alive so go back to the ward

I looked around..

Me: How did you? Are you stalking me?

I looked at the Nurse and she looked around..

Ken: Go back

I hung up..

Me: Jeez!!

Nurse: I'm sure he means well

Me: Sometimes I wonder if he's a psychopath or a Narcissist

She wheeled me back..

Nurse: Psychopaths don't feel emotions, He cried when he brought you in

I chuckled..

Me: Ken cried? Must've faked it

Nurse: Not at all, You could see from his face that he was scared of losing you. He wasn't faking at all

That was New...

KEN

I checked, And it indicated that she was back in the ward. I exhaled deeply, For a second there I was scared..

Her phone has a tracker. Before I gave it to her I

had taken it somewhere so they can put a tracker that will always alert me about her whereabouts..

I almost lost her, I don't want to actually lose her next time. Not when Ace and I have found ourselves mixed up on the shady side of the law..

I heard him coughing..

I put my phone in my pocket and went back inside the shack.. My facial expression had changed from being worried to being pissed..

He was tired, Tired of crying, Tired of begging and all that. Two days now since Ace held him up..

He couldn't even keep his eyes open..

Ace: He's done Ken

Me: Good.. I want his legs tied up to a heavy rock and thrown in the deepest damn

Ace: Can I talk to you?

He threw the tools down and we walked outside..

Ace: I thought you said Musa doesn't want you to kill her Brother



Me: What Musa wants is irrelevant right now

Ace: Ken

Me: Ace.. If I showed up a few minutes later,  
She would've died and that fucker inside  
would've killed her

Ace: Are you sure about this?

Me: I don't want him found, I want him to go  
missing forever

Ace: A damn won't do then.. I will have him  
buried at the cemetery. Unmarked grave

Me: I don't care what you do just do it, And I

want her house burnt down to the ground so  
she never goes back there

Ace: Is this still love or an obsession?

Me: It's me protecting my family

I looked at the time..

Me: I have to go check what's happening at the  
pub and grill

Ace: I'm going to need 5k for the house burning  
plan

Me: Come collect it at the pub

Ace: Sure

MUSA

When we got back, On my bed I found a bouquet of red roses with money inside. Another Nurse was standing guarding it..

She smiled at me and Walked out..

Nurse: Now we know why he wanted you back in here

Me: Wow

Nurse: And you still think this guy doesn't love you?

Me: This is beautiful

Nurse: I'll help you get in bed

Me: Thank you.. I shall tip you

She laughed..

Me: You've been good to me, I appreciate it very much

Nurse: You welcome

RUTH

He drove in..

Jabu: Go..

She pushed me..

Jabu: Go!

I ran to him as he got out..

Me: Ken.. Hey

He looked at me as he closed the door..

Ken: hey

Me: I.. First of all thank you for that day

Ken: Yeah sure.. No problem

He walked away..

Me: Ken

He turned and looked at me. He seemed annoyed..

Me: I.. You said if I needed a ride you'll always come through

Ken: Catch a cab

Me: But y-

Ken: I know.. That was then, This is now

Me: Jerk!!

I said that whilst walking away, I felt someone grabbing me by my t-shirt from the back and threw me against the fence. I didn't fall though..

Me: Awwww!!!

Ken: Say that again.. I didn't hear you?

I turned and looked at him scared..

Ken: Exactly!! Now fuck off!!

GABI

I was at pick N pay comparing prices..

The Omo washing powder was more expensive.  
I bit my nails and looked at it..

Voice: Take it, I'll pay

I freaked out, I turned and some guy was  
standing behind me with a trolley..



Me: You gave me a fright

Him: Askies, I didn't mean too

Me: Uhm.. No it's okay

Him: Take it

Me: No man will buy you something without wanting something in return

Him: Eish.. Yaa you caught me

Me: Thank you though, My pussy is not R58

Him: Well I was thinking in the lines of a lunch

date after this

I turned again and looked at him..

Him: Ace

Me: Gabi

The corner of his mouth rose..

Him: Gabisile.. So what do you say? Is it a deal?

Me: You know you look familiar

Him: So do you skado, So do you

.

To be continued

THE NARCISSIST

54

MUSA

The day that I was anticipating the most finally came. Monday finally came, The day when I finally got discharged. Ken came to fetch me at around 12:00 in the afternoon, I had to wait for the Dr to check me and redeem me fit to leave..

Nurse: I'm going to miss you so much

Me: Me too but I hope I don't come here anytime soon

Nurse: Me too

Ken wheeled me out to the car..

Ken: Ready to go?

Me: Yessssssssss

Ken: I bought you one of those pillows to support your back

Me: Thank you

He opened the door and gently picked me up, Trying not to hurt me. He placed me in the

passenger's seat. I tried to sit comfortably, The car was adjusted to give me more space. He fixed the pillow behind me..

Ken: Want the seat belt?

Me: Where it runs on the side is where Pakiso stabbed me, It's going to be very uncomfortable

Ken: Shuuuuuu so I'll have to be careful when driving

Me: It seems like that

Ken: I'll try

He kissed me and closed the door..

I couldn't wait to see Sedi..

GABISILE

The Bolt dropped me off at the mall. I fixed my shades..

I had the mother of all hangovers. I drank Saturday and yesterday. Basically I had a good weekend..

I took the escalator and met him upstairs at the restaurant. He was already waiting..

I made my way to his table...

He was busy with his phone, He stopped typing and looked at me. He had a cup of coffee close to him. I sat down opposite him..

Ace: Good day to you too

He wasn't wearing his hat, And his haircut was freshly trimmed. Probably went to the barber shop yesterday. He looked good with and without his hat..

Me: Good afternoon

I took off my shades..

Ace: Rough weekend?

Me: Yes

The waitress came..

Waitress: Good day

Me: Good day

She gave me two menus. Drinks and food. Ace already had his menus..

Waitress: Something to drink Mam?

Me: Do you have a cocktail? I think a cocktail is a lighter alcohol beverage



Waitress: Which cocktail?

Me: Eerr.. You recommend a good one

Waitress: Cherry dozer, Mango sunrise, Long Island, Mojito

Me: Uhm.. Cherry dozer

Waitress: Okay coming up

Ace: Warm water with a slice of lemon too please

Waitress: Yes Sir

She walked away..

Ace: You know cocktails have a higher percentage of alcohol because they mix spirits. You'll be drunk all over again

Me: Do you drink Ace?

Ace: No, But I checked the menu

Me: I drink

Ace: I see that

Me: Is that going to be a problem for you?

Ace: Kanti mina what did I say?

Me: Nothing

Ace: I was just sharing my input, If you wanna drink Skado do so.. I'll get you all the cocktails you want

I took the menu..

Ace: You still look beautiful, Even with puppy eyes

I smiled and went back to the menu..

MUSA

The ride home was uncomfortable I won't lie. I felt every speed bump and everything else. Ken was biting his tongue hoping we get home in a speed of lightning..

When I closed my eyes and bit my lip or made a sigh, It would cut through his heart and he kept on apologizing like it was his fault..

We drove in and I was happy, All I wanted to do was sleep..

He came to my side and picked me up..

Ken: I'll get your things after putting you down

Me: I can walk Ken

Ken: I know

I opened the door for him, When we entered I heard "Surprise". I thought it was only going to be Aneni and Sedi, But I guess I was wrong..

We went to the living room, He put me down on my feet and held both my hands..

It was Aneni, Sedi, Kurai, His father and Kodessa..

Sedi ran to me and hugged my legs..

I saw "Welcome home Musa" on the wall.

Balloons, All the works. Drinks on the table, Just everything prepared..

It was overwhelming..

Me: You guys

Ken picked up Lesedi..

Kurai: Look at you, You glowing. Got some complexion

I didn't know what to say, Tears streamed down..

Kodessa: Ohhhh don't cry

Ken put his hand around my waist, Whilst holding Lesedi with the other hand. I buried my face on his chest..

Ken: Welcome home baby

GABISILE

I couldn't even eat, That's how bad the hangover was...

I was only able to drink the cocktail and the lemon water he got me.. I even felt like vomiting

Ace: Weeeh

Me: Ace don't start

Ace: You should've just texted me that you can't make it, You tired and hungover

Me: I'm not an amateur drinker

Ace: If you a professional then you wouldn't be this messed up

Me: Mxm

His gaze went from his plate to me when I said that. It was a serious stare after saying that..

Me: Sorry



I closed my eyes and leaned back. He didn't say anything. I opened my eyes and looked at his hands. His knuckles looked bruised, Fresh bruises..

Me: What happened to your knuckles?

He mized..

Me: Ace

Ace: I bit up someone

I looked at him dumbfounded..

Ace: Or you'd rather have me lying to you?

Me: Why?

Ace: Long story Skado

Me: Do you beat woman?

Ace: No.. If I go to jail it'll be because of my lifestyle not for beating up a woman

Me: So if a woman pisses you off to that point, You don't snap?

Ace: I'd rather leave you than snap, If you going to anger me to that point. I'll leave you

I leaned forward and tried eating again..

MUSA

Ken's father presented me with an electric wheelchair. I recieved a few gifts. My favorite was the wheelchair and a pregnancy pillow..

Me: I truly appreciate everything guys

Aneni was holding Sedi, Sedi wanted to sit on me. She might inflict my wounds and cause me pain..

Kurai: Here is your piece of cake

Me: Thank you

Ken was sleeping in the bedroom now..

Kodessa: If you want us to leave so you can rest, Don't be scared to say

Me: It's fine I'm not tired, Spent my time in bed for the past few days

Kurai: If you feel tired though do say

Me: I'm just glad Ken is sleeping, He was sleeping on the chair in the hospital

Kurai: He was worried about you, Never seen him worried about anyone like that before. Not

even me

Me: Please hold here.. I wanna use the bathroom

Kodessa took my plate..

Kurai: Do you need help?

Me: I'll be fine thank you

I wheeled myself to the bathroom.. I extended my hand and the door opened. I went in, I then closed the door and cried. I tried to be silent about it. I was crying because I was overwhelmed with emotions, Everyone being here to welcome me. Ken's father buying me an

expensive wheelchair. No one has ever cared for me like this, Other than my Mother. I have two brothers who don't give a shit about me, And these people who aren't even blood related to me care this much about me..

.

To be continued

55

MUSA

5 MONTHS LATER

I looked at myself in the mirror. I wasn't happy with my weight. I have been through a traumatic experience last month, One that left me emotionally, Mentally, And physically scarred. As if that wasn't enough, A fire started at my

house. The home I've known all my life burnt down. Neighbours were only alerted by the smoke and flames in the early hours of the morning..

They didn't see nothing, They don't know what exactly happened..

Ken had taken me to see someone after that incident, Someone who could see beyond our physical world. He told me that the fire started as "Umlilo waba phantsi", Ancestral revenge fire for what Pakiso did to me. Apparently my Mom was furious that she started the fire..

Speaking of Pakiso, He disappeared. He's nowhere to be found and Ken has promised that he never touched him..

I moved from wearing 32 to wearing 30, Then 28. That's how much I've lost weight with everything that's been happening a few months ago. . My Dr and Dietician were very worried about me because I wasn't eating as much as I needed too. It was only when I woke up one day and decided to stop depressing myself about things that I couldn't change. I had my own family to be strong for. Sedi, Ken and our unborn baby girl. I focused more on myself and the ones who love me rather than what I've lost, And I was able to enjoy my pregnancy. Shot straight to size 34..

Gabi: Look at this dress, It'll suit you

Me: Yaa if it was bigger, Don't play with me



We both laughed..

She put it back.. I am so happy for Gabi. In a matter of a month, Her life changed drastically. She found a Man Ace, According to her it started with just joining him for breakfast, Then they started dating. He shocked us all when he proposed to her. It was so fast, Very fast. He paid lobola for her and we are awaiting their marriage next year. In just a space of 5 months, Her life has changed for the better. He even found her a job at the municipality, A lot of bribing and favours had to be done. Ace knows people who knows people. Some of his clients are also high profile people, As he's not working for Ken only.. She's even a better person, All the bitterness has vanished. She's in a good space and I love that for her..

She took another one, Her bling was shining.  
You couldn't miss it..

Gabi: This one?

Me: I guess so, I guess it'll work

Gabi: Finally!!.. You almost made me late for  
work, My lunchbreak is almost over!

I followed her, She was wearing blue jeans, The  
Municipality t-shirt and boots....

KEN

I was shit worried about Musa. I tried to track  
her but her phone was off, She knows that I

hate it when her phone is off..

Me: Where did she say she was going?

Kurai: Meeting up with Gabi at the mall,  
Something like that

Me: Which mall?

Kurai: I don't know, Can you relax. You making  
me more paranoid

Me: I won't relax!! All that I ask for in this house  
is for you guys to keep your phones on!! That's  
all!!

Kurai: We have Ace on speed dial too, If

something happens we call you or him

I bit my tongue at the mention of his name..

Ace is the one I'm trying to keep everyone safe from.. I haven't been okay ever since I found out about him and Gabi. At first I brushed it off, Thinking they were just fooling around and it won't last. It took me out when he proposed and actually paid lobola for this girl. I saw how serious he was about her, And I don't know if one day during pillow talk Gabi will come out right and tell him what I did to her. Ace does love this woman, I've seen them together and he's madly in love with her.. Now if Gabi tells him what I've done to her. I wouldn't want Ace as an enemy...

I have to keep all the girls safe, Musa is even

close to her due date and she's carrying a girl. I don't want anything happening to her, She's been through a lot.

Kurai: What's working up your arse?

Me: I have enemies Kurai, Serious enemies

Kurai: You've always had enemies and it never bothered you before

Me: It's different now

I looked at the time..

Me: I'm going to fetch Sedi from the day care

Sedi is better now since life has been peaceful. She goes to daycare and her speech has improved a lot...

ACE

Client: So if he files for divorce, I ain't getting a cent

I looked at the picture of her husband..

Me: Let me get this straight. You cheat on your husband, And if he finds out then divorces you. You ain't getting a cent? So now you wanna kill him so you can get his money then move away with your lover?

Client: Pretty much, How much is it going to be?

I tossed the picture on the table..

Me: I'm not going to do it

Client: Excuse me? They said you come of highly recommend and no questions asked!

5 months ago, I would've taken this gig without asking questions. I wouldn't have hesitated to do it, But now. Things have changed, Ever since Gabi came into my life I am half of the man that I used to be before her. I now have a heart and a soul. She came and ignited the human in me, And most of the things I used to do before. I try not to do them again.. She doesn't know exactly

what I do, All she knows is what I told her. One thing about her she doesn't ask a lot of questions, She doesn't become a constant irritating ring in my ear..

Client: This is absurd.. Fine, I'll pay you R300 000

I looked at her..

Client: Half before the job and the other half after the job

I sighed..

Client: Please I'm desperate



I looked at my phone and looked at Gabi's picture as my wallpaper..

Me: Fine I'll do it

She closed her eyes and opened them..

Client: Thank you, So how do I pay you?

MUSA

Gabi: I need to go back to work, I'm sorry we can't do lunch together

Me: It's okay, Maybe you and Ace can come over for dinner

She put her hand in her pocket..

Me: Come on, This hate you have towards Ken you need to let it go. He's a better man now, We are better people now. Ace and Ken not only work together but they also good friends, We good friends. How much do you find that in people?

Gabi: I'll talk to Ace and see if he'll be available

Me: Thank you

I hugged her..

Me: I am happy with how everything is between

all of us

She hugged me back..

Gabi: Me too

.

To be continued

56

MUSA

After the gate opened, I drove in. Ken was standing outside smoking. I took my bags and got out of the car. As I approached him, I saw a few cigarette buds on the ground. He smokes a lot when he's stressed or angry. For someone who smokes like him, I often wonder how much

he pays at the dental surgery because he has a good Oral Hygiene. Must be paying a lot to keep his teeth from stains, Coffee and cigarettes are his go too when he's stressed..

I approached him but stood a bit of a distance from him, Because I felt he was angry at me. He hasn't hit me nor threatened to hit me ever since that time he choked me half to death, But I haven't fully trusted him in that department. When Ken gets mad, He gets mad. You can see it in his eyes and the furrow eyebrows..

He threw the cigarette on the ground and stepped on it whilst puffing out the smoke. He was wearing a Jean, Tshirt and his sleepers. He still had his socks on confirming that he just got home..

Me: I went shopping with Gabi

Ken: I don't care if you went shopping, Why is your phone off?

He said that with his eyes still glued on his sleepers busy crushing the cigarette..

Me: It's off?

His gaze quickly moved from the ground to me, Eyebrows still furrowed as a form of a warning that I shouldn't make him a fool. I dropped down the plastic bag with the clothes and unzipped my bag to check my phone, Indeed it was off..

Me: I must've forgotten to charge it

Ken: You think this is a joke neh?

He's been overly protective ever since I got stabbed...

Me: I didn't realize Ken, I would never not forget to charge my phone when I know you track my movements

Ken: Don't patronize me

Me: I am not patronizing you I'm actually mocking you. I've been cooped up in the house for a while now, I hardly go out. I needed this break

Ken: You need a break. You go out to the back, You get into the pool. You walk around the yard, Hell dare you can even watch everything on Netflix and eat every food in the house. You just don't decide to go out without letting me know when I have repeatedly made it clear that I have bigger enemies now and they wouldn't hesitate to come after you!!.. If anything happens to you, What's going to become of me and Lesedi?

I was ready to take him up on this argument head on, But that last statement kinda made me a bit sad. He's been scared of losing of losing me..

Me: It won't happen again

Ken: It better not

We stood there looking at each other, He folded his arms and brought his hand closer to his lips biting off his thumb nail..

Ken: You owe me an apology

Me: For what? For meeting up with my best friend? I don't think so

I tried to bend down to pick up the plastic.  
Though the scars have healed but my back still gets sore from time to time..

I got back and looked at him..



Me: Can you please help me out here?

He clicked his tongue and walked away..

Ken: Entlek ung'Jwayela kabi

I rolled my eyes....

Me: Typical

GABISILE

Immediately when I got to work, I called Ace..

Ace: Mazulu

His surname is Zulu. Ace Zulu..

Me: Are you busy?

Ace: Kancance nje (Just a bit)

Me: I was calling to find out what you wanted to eat tonight for dinner

Ace: The same raw juicy meat every night

I chuckled..

Me: I'm talking about real food Ndabezitha

Ace: Ahhhh I don't know surprise me

Me: Maybe we can try something different,  
Pizza

Ace: Chaa ngeke ngizopheka (I'll cook)

Me: Are you sure?

Ace: Uyangabaza? (Are you complaining)

Me: With my job I can't afford to spend all night  
in the toilet

I laughed whilst saying that..

Ace: Thenga uPizza wakho ke Mazulu (Buy your

pizza)

Me: I'll see you later

Ace: Ngiyak'thanda uyezwa? (I love you)

Me: Uthandwa yimi (I love you too)

MUSA

I got inside the house actually kicking the plastic over..

Me: Sedi!!

She came running..

Me: pick this up for me

I pointed at the place..

Sedi: This??? This?? This??

Me: Yes.. Pick it up for mommy

She sat down next to it..

Me: Pick up Sedi

Sedi: Up??

Me: Yes

She got up and picked it up. At least I can try to take it from her. Ken came and picked her up, Knocking the plastic over..

Me: Really?

Ken: It's time for your swimming lesson

He tickled her and Sedi laughed..

Kurai came over and picked it up for me..

Kurai: You know he's just gonna torture you until you apologize

Me: I'm not apologizing, He can torture me but he'll be torturing himself too. Especially since he's addicted to having sex with me every night ever since I got pregnant

Kurai: Okay we talked about this, No sexual conversations with me where my Brother is included. It's gross

Me: Relax Kurai you don't even hear us

Kurai: That's the beauty of it, Or I'll be traumatized. Making his room sound proof was smart

I laughed..

Kurai: I'm starting on dinner

Me: I'll come and help

GABISILE

Me: Is this the last one for today?

Mandla: Yes

My job requires me to get down and dirty. A department that only was given to Men, Instead of sitting in the office every day I just wanted to be out and working. We fix a lot of burst pipes and all that shit, Getting into this department was difficult as the Men in there viewed me as someone who would slow them down. I don't



know how Ace pulled it off, And I'm grateful he did. My life has taught me to not fully depend on a man no matter how good he treats me..

Ace handles most of our bills, That helps me to put some of my money away. Keep on investing..

I took off my ring and put it on my backpack..

Mandla is the only one who actually treats me like an equal, The others don't necessarily treat me bad right in my face. They try very hard to avoid me..

Mandla: Ready?

Me: Yes I am

Mandla: Let's go to the truck then

I followed him..

MUSA

I sat on the bed lost deep in my thoughts. I felt tears coming, I wiped them away before they fell..

Gabi and I see each other from time to time, But today in particular was the first time she snuck out of work to meet up with me. Seeing her reminded me of how much I'm a failure. I am about to have my second child. No job, Nothing!

I'm actually depending on a man, Something that my Mother always fought against. I felt like a big failure, I felt so small in the presence of Gabi that I should've done something better with my life. I know she has two kids but they don't stay with her, Baby daddies got full custody and they wanted her to play far from the boys. She's out there being an independent woman with a man as a bonus and I'm here just popping out babies and dependent on Ken.. It's truly defeating..

ACE

Gabi doesn't need a reason to work. I do make reasonable money that can take care of us and our future kids. She could just choose to stay at home and I wouldn't mind, But she didn't want too. She wanted to have a job and I don't mind

that. I love her more for that, I think she's never had a chance to work and have her own money. She comes across as someone who needed to depend on others.. She didn't exactly tell me that, I'm just a good judge of character..

I got home and defrosted the meat, I'm still going to cook despite her buying pizza..

I went to the bedroom to put my keys in the drawer, I saw her journal on the dressing table next to her perfumes. I think she forgot it there, She usually writes on it. I don't know what she writes, Never asked.

I went and picked it. I debated with myself if I should read it or not. That would break our trust, She never leaves it lying around..

I put it back and walked to the door. I stopped turning around and looking at it..

Me: Fuck it

I walked over and picked it up again. I paged through. The first page was clean, Second page too. The third page was where she started..

The title was "My Pain". I sat on the bed and started reading..

.

To be continued

57

ACE

I had to stop reading halfway because things that she detailed in there made the demon in me to come alive. I had a lot of things running through my mind that I couldn't even cook anymore. I went to the garage and worked the punching bag without wearing any gloves. She didn't write who sexually violated her, She didn't give out a name but.. I remember her night at the pub where she was drunk, I think she had a big fight with Musa and she was saying a lot of shit about her friend, Including chanting that Ken is a rapist. I didn't think much of it, Thought she was just being dramatic and creating a fake narrative. You know how girls are when they fight, Especially friends. I thought she was just being a mean girl for a second..

Ken did bring it up but his revenge on the situation that he brought up to me where Gabi

is concerned was the black magic thing, And I doubt he went through with it.

I know Ken is shitty with women and Ken shares almost his dirty works with me. If he was set to sexually violate Gabi he would've told me, He never did. On the other hand, He might have done it, And kept it to himself. The thought of that made me to punch even more harder, With my heart pumping nothing but anger. I kept on imagining the scenario of what happened in my head, And it made me more mad..

Now I can't out right ask Ken, If he did it it'll alarm him and he might resort to killing my fiancé. If I ask Gabi it might turn out bad, She might be angry that I read her journal and we won't have trust anymore in our relationship. At

the same time I can't let this go, It's too much for me to let it go. It's too much for me to come into terms with it, That the woman I lie next too every night went through something like that..

I am all things but never not even once have I slept with a woman without her permission and never will I...

KEN

I never told Ace what I did to Gabi, At that time it didn't feel important because Gabi wasn't so important to us. Now she's important to Ace, She might tell him..

There's only reason why I wouldn't wanna take Ace head on. He is capable of ruining my family



for me. Ace knows everything about me, Including all the things I've done to Musa. Her mother's house burning down, Pakiso missing and my taking her to Masole my witch doctor so he could lie to her and say the fire was started by her mother because she was mad at Pakiso. I don't even want Musa knowing what I did to Gabi. This time around I feel she might leave me for real and never come back. I'm going to lose her and the kids. She might not even allow me to see the kids and the law will defend her. She's going to take my kids and go wherever, They might struggle and one thing I hate will having them both raised by another man. Yes Lesedi is not biologically mine, But I now take her as my daughter.. I don't think I'll ever be able to live without them.. Ace has everything on me to bury me alive..

GABISILE

I finally knocked off.. We live in a residential estate, The houses are beautiful and rent is not a joke. Ace wants us to buy a house when we married, So basically rent ain't too hectic for him. Plus he told he's lived here for 3 years now..

I noticed the garage door was open, I parked my Suzuki swift in the driveway when I noticed that Ace was in his working mood..

I really love the swift since I'm not that much good in driving as yet..

I got out and made my way to him, I noticed he was throwing fists at the punching bag without wearing any protective gloves. He was sweating and breathing heavy..

Me: Ndabezitha

He didn't hear me, I've never seen him so focused..

I stood behind the punching bag, The last fist he threw at it hand me dangling a bit. If this things wasn't hard, He would've knocked me down with it..

He freaked out when he saw me standing behind it, He came to examine me if he didn't hurt me..

Me: Ngi right (I'm okay)

Ace: I don't understand why you would stand behind it

Me: I tried calling out to you but you didn't hear

He walked over, Took the bottle of water and drank it. Then splashed the rest on his sweaty upper body..

We've never fought, No argued. Ace is a very humble someone and he would rather have you guys talk about any issues without screaming. He hates noise..

Me: uRight kodwa? (Are you alright)

He smiled at me hanging over the towel on his

broad shoulders..

Ace: Ngi right.. How was your day?

Me: Tiring as always

I went over to check his knuckles, The skin had chipped a bit. I looked at him..

Me: Why didn't you use the gloves?

Ace: I couldn't find them, Think I misplaced them

He was still breathing heavy..

I looked at them and looked at him..

Ace: Angiwabonanga (I didn't see them)

Me: If it was a snake, They would've bitten you

He smiled..

Me: I'll go prepare some water in the basin with salt so you can soak your hands

Ace: Kodwa what would I do without you

I walked to the door that connected to a route from the garage to the house. He hit me with the towel on my butt..

Me: Awukahle (Stop it)

I pretended not to like it, But deep down I liked it..

I walked to the bedroom with a smile on my face, The smile vanished when I saw my journal on my side of the bed. On my pillow. I let go of my bag pack and it fell to the floor. I always keep it hidden from him, Now I don't know if he found it or if I left it on my pillow. I was more scared than he might have read it..

I took it and went back to him..

Me: Ace

He looked at me..

Me: Did you??

I put my hand on my chest..

Me: Did you? Were you snooping through my things?

I waved the journal at him

He looked at me..

Ace: Chaa.. I also saw it on your pillow when I got home, I think you forgot it there



Me: Ohw

Ace: Yaa

Me: Okay then.. I will order pizza via the app

I turned back to go to the house..

Ace: MaZulu

Me: Yes?

Ace: For the first time you just addressed me with my name... Khona into ekuhluphayo? (Is there anything bothering you)

Me: No.. Just work that's all

Ace: Ngiyezwa (I hear you)

I walked back into the house whilst exhaling in relief. The journal includes explicit things that Ken did to me. No sane person would read it and just act like they didn't, I don't think he read it..

.

To be continued

SEASON FINALE

58

GABISILE

My hardest challenge where love making was involved with Ace, Was the fact that I had to push past what happened to me and make sure the sex was enjoyable. Sad that I got my ideal man when I've been through so much trauma with Men. I didn't wanna tell him the truth, He works with this Person and I don't want to start a serious fight where innocent people will be involved. I've burned Musa once before, I don't wanna do it again

I showered first, And he showered after. When he got out still wet, I walked up to him and kissed him. I lowered my hand from his wet chest down to his crotch. I held it in my hand hoping it comes alive, He pushed me back a little..

I looked at him..

Ace: I'm just tired today

Me: I'm also tired but we can make it quick

I tried to kiss him again, He pushed me back..

Ace: Not tonight Mazulu

He went and grabbed the towel to wipe his body.  
That was the most embarrassing thing for me,  
He's never turned me down before...

MUSA

I woke up the next morning, Got out of bed to go to the bathroom. When I looked at myself in the mirror, Fixing my head wrap. I noticed a bracelet on my arm. It was flashing green.. I checked it..

Me: Wtf?

I tried to get it off, It wasn't. I walked to the living room, Ken was eating breakfast and Busy on his phone..

Me: Ken what is it?

I flashed it to him...

Ken: Since your phone to be dying a lot, That's a

wrist tracking bracelet..

Me: A what?

Ken: Put it on your wrist last night. You won't be able to take it off, No one can. I am the only one with the code

Me: Okay.. Say I get kidnapped, They will get it off

Ken: Only skilled kidnappers, If they not. They'll just cut off your arm

Me: And that sounds normal to you?

Ken: If you just kept your phone on at all times,

The wouldn't be any need for such a drastic matter

Me: What is wrong with you?

Ken: I have a family to protect, Especially since I do business with dangerous people. Kurai keeps hers on, She hasn't given me any problems

Me: This is madness Ken!!

Ken: You knew who I was and what I was about when you fell for me, I don't know why you acting surprised now

I sighed irritated..

Ken: Don't concern yourself about water ruining it sweetheart. It's waterproof!!

GABISILE

I was eating breakfast preparing for the day ahead. I felt hands on my shoulders, Then felt his chin on my head. His cologne was different today, Than the one he normally uses..

Me: Good morning

Ace: Good morning

I continued eating..



Ace: I was thinking we can invite our friends over for dinner tonight

I swallowed almost choking..

Ace: Ken has been hinting he wants to thank you for helping Musa that day

Me: Ohw

Ace: I can hire someone to cook for the night, Just so you'll be here

Me: I'll be here

Ace: I'll let him know

Me: Okay

KEN

I strapped Sedi into the car seat..

My phone vibrated, It was a call from Ace..

Me: Ace

Ace: Eita

Me: Yeah?

Ace: Gabi and I were inviting you and Musa for

dinner tonight, At our place

Me: Tonight?

Ace: Yes.. You owe Gabi appreciation remember? For saving Musa's life. That's what the dinner is going to be about

Me: Yaa that

Ace: 19:00?

I would say No, But I'm thinking Gabi will call Musa to tell her..

Me: Yaa we will be there

Ace: Sharp

Me: Sharp

I hung up..

GABISILE

I was driving to work. Whilst on the phone with my Mom..

Mom: I recieved it, Thank you Gabi

Our relationship has been better now compared to before..

Mom: Ngibonga kakhulu. Inkosi ikubusise (God bless you)

Me: Okay Ma

Mom: Unjani umkhwenyana? (How is Ace)

Me: He's fine

Mom: Umphathe kahle (Treat him well)

Me: I will

I hung up..

MUSA

I tried taking it off, I couldn't..

A call from Gabi came..

Me: Hi

Gabi: Hey.. You alright?

Me: I'm alright.. Wena?

Gabi: I'm good, How is the little one?

Me: She's good.. Can't wait to give birth

Gabi: You will.. So Ace and I are planning some dinner. Can you pull through with Ken?

Me: Yes.. Of course tonight?

Gabi: Yes

Me: Okay can't wait

Gabi: Me too, I'll see you later then

Me: Sharp

I hung up..

I texted Ken...

ACE

Sis: Only if you can fetch me

I had to let go of my helper since Gabi came through. Though she has a job, But she's fully hands on around the house..

I called someone who can cook African dishes well.. My little sister..

Sis: How much are you paying me?

Me: Aww ngeke Samke



Sis: Cooking looks easy but trust me, It's exhausting

Me: 1k?

Sis: 1.5k

Me: You only cooking for 4 people

Sis: 1.5k take it or leave it

Me: Fine

Sis: Let me bath ke, Then you can fetch me

.

To be continued

## SEASON FINALE

59

### GABISILE

When I knocked off at 17:30 I rushed home. I arrived at 18:00..

Ace had asked his little sister to cook. She prepared a meal that was mouth watering. Beef stew, Dumblings, Pap, Rice, Chicken, Salads and a dessert. Just your typical African dishes that are mouth watering..

Me: Samke ngiyabonga Sisi kakhulu (Thank you so much)

The dinning table was set with the food warmers. Dessert and wine was in the fridge, Beers for the guys and something non-alcoholic for the highly pregnant Musa..

Samke: I don't mind helping Sisi

His sister is very sweet, She's such a respectful angel..

Samke: let me go

Me: You not staying?

Samke: Ohh no my baby daddy will be fetching me

Ace clenched his Jaws..

Me: Okay Sisi thank you so much, Let me go  
and refresh

Ace: When is this guy paying lobola, This  
cohabitation of yours I don't understand

Samke: Don't start with me

I left them arguing there..

MUSA

Me: Sedi stop

I was putting on makeup with Sedi who was busy messing everything up

Me: Sedi!!!

She stopped..

Kurai: Sedi come baby

Me: I'm trying to finish up here

Kurai: Makeup for an indoor dinner with your best friend?

Me: I look ugly, Makeup helps hide my

pregnancy ugliness

Kurai: Ohw yaa I heard if you carrying a boy you glow, A girl sucks in all your beauty

Me: Really?

Kurai: So I heard

Me: Makes sense

Kurai: You don't look ugly though

Me: I hope so

Ken walked in..

Ken: Are you ready?

He went to the wardrobe to take out a t-shirt..

Me: Almost

Kurai: I'll see you guys when you get back

Me: Okay thank you kurai for looking after Sedi

Kurai: Anytime

Ken: Don't you wanna take my place Kurai? I'll look after Sedi

Kurai: No thank you

GABISILE

I just wore a normal decent dress, I mean the dinner is indoors..

Me: Samke left?

Ace: Yes

Me: She's 25 Ndabezitha, No longer a child anymore

Ace: I am not cohabitating with you, I expect my Sister not too



I laughed shaking my head..

Ace: Come here

He wrapped his arm around my waist and pulled me closer..

Ace: I love you.. You know that right?

Me: I do

Ace: And I don't want to see you hurt nor have someone hurt you

Me: I understand

Ace: Whether before or now

Me: I know

He kissed me..

Ace: Let's have dinner with our friends

Me: They'll be here soon

MUSA

We arrived. With a bouquet of flowers for Gabisile, With a bottle of wine and a bottle of scotch for Ace..

They welcomed us in, I could already smell the food from the kitchen..

We greeted and exchanged hugs..

They led us to the living room, The dining table already had the food. We sat down..

Me: This smells nice

Gabi: I'm sure you'll enjoy

Ken: You cooked all of this?

Gabi: No.. I had my sister in law help me

Ken: Okay

We dished up and started eating. I was the only one not drinking alcohol..

Ace: When are you due Musa?

Me: Soon.. Very soon

Ace: I'm sure you can't wait

Me: Not at all

Ken: Gabi I never got the time to thank you for your help, When Musa was stabbed

Me: Yes my friend.. Thank you so much, Heard what you for me

Gabi: It's okay, You would've done the same for me

Me: True

Ace: Is that all you wanted to say?

Ken: Excuse me?

Ace: I mean.. Isn't there something else?

Ken looked at Gabi..

Ken: Let it go Man.. It was before you hitched the bitch

Me: Ken!!

Ace: A bitch?

Ken: Yes.. You broke the bro code, Married the bitch

Ace: Okay.. That's enough

He got up and pulled out his gun, He pointed it at Ken..

Me: Ken what is going on?

Ken: I guess the dinner is done, Let's go  
sweetheart

Ken stood up..

Ken: Let's go sweetheart

He helped me up..

Ace pointed the gun at me, On my belly..

Gabi: Ace!!!

Ace: Sit down Ken

Ken: This is between you and I

Ace: I said sit down

Me: What the hell is going on?

Ace: Tell this woman the truth, The whole truth

Ken: Ace if you don't fucken lower the gun you know I won't r-

Ace: Tell this woman the truth right now!!

He shot through the wall next to me.. I freaked out and screamed. So did Gabi..



Ken: Okay!! Okay!!

Ace: Good.. Thought the next one was going to be on her skull

Ken: Musa.. Listen to me.. I love you so much and baby I did something that I'm not proud of

Ace: Say it already

Ken: When.. I.. I slept with Gabi

Me: What?

Ace: Don't fuck with me Ken.. You didn't sleep

with her.. You raped her! Say it!!

Me: What.. What is he talking about?

I looked at Gabi..

Tears streamed down her cheeks..

Me: Ken

Ken: It's true

Me: Ohh my God

Ace: You gonna need God for this Ntokazi because that's not all.. Your brother ain't

coming back, Ken had me bury him at the cemetery after killing him. Your Mother's house, It didn't just burn down. He called the number and then took you to his witch doctor to lie to you

I shook my head..

Me: No.. No.. No..

Ace lowered the gun.. It was quiet for a while..

He put it around his waist..

Ace: Great dinner

He picked up his glass of wine..

Ace: Cheers

Ken got up and flipped the table at Ace. He then lashed out to him, They both fell to the floor fighting..

I sank down back to the chair confused, Hurt and struggling to breath..

Gabi: Stop it!! Stop it!!

Ken: I'm going to kill you, You Son of a bitch!!

They both continued fighting, Gabi was confused on whom to attend..

Then as they continued fighting. The gun went off..

.

To be continued

SEASON FINALE

60

ACE

I heard someone waking me up, I slowly opened my eyes still drunk by sleep..

It was my Sister, Samke..

Samke: I don't know what Dessert to prepare

I rose up from the bed, Dumbfounded. I looked at the time, It was 16:00..

Samke: uRight?

Me: Yaa.. I think I had a bad dream or something

Samke: Ibingani? (What was the dream about?)

Me: Nothing serious

Samke: Okay.. What dessert should I prepare then for you and your guests?

I got out of bed, Wore my sleepers and dragged my feet to the kitchen...

MUSA

I had this back pain and my feet were sore.

I took a trip to the kitchen, Ken was sitting at the table with his laptop and some files.

I placed my hand underneath my belly, Ken looked at me..

Ken: Are you alright?

Me: Just feeling a bit disoriented

He pushed his chair backwards, With his hands  
balancing on the table. He stood up and came  
to me. He ran his hand on my back..

Ken: Wanna go to the hospital?

I placed both my hands on his chest and laid my  
head..

Me: I don't wanna disappoint Gabi

Ken: But you don't seem to be feeling well,  
There's going to be more dinners

Me: I'm sure it'll go away



Ken: I'm taking you to the hospital

Me: You overreacting

Ken: Just to make sure that you guys are okay

He helped me to the couch..

Ken: Kurai!! Kurai??

ACE

I stood at the doorway and looked at the table..  
The daymare I had felt real. It felt so real..

Samke: Weeh people get lazy these days. Sithi

ultramel and vanilla ice cream manje for  
iDessert

I didn't mind her, I was looking at the table  
replaying my terrible dream in my head..

Samke: Uma would lose it right now, Ultramel  
plus ice cream

I still didn't mind her..

Samke: Ace!!!

I looked at her..

Samke: Kanti yini? (What's wrong)

Me: Nothing.. Just thinking about something

She handed me the plates..

Samke: Put them on the table please

I walked over to place them on the table..

MUSA

Kurai: I'll go and fetch uSedi don't worry

Me: I'm sure it's nothing serious

He handed me my bag..

Ken: We'll find out from the Dr

He wrapped his arm around my waist and led me outside of the house to the car..

Ace: I'll call Ace when we in the car, Depending on what the Dr say. We might attend or miss the dinner invitation

He opened the door for me and I got in. He adjusted the chair and strapped the seatbelt on me. I took out my phone in my bag to call Gabi...

This was disappointing, I was really looking forward to the dinner invitation. I hate disappointing Gabi, Especially after what she's done for me...

Ken got in..

Me: I'll call Gabi and tell her, She'll be disappointed

Ken: She'll understand

RUTH

Me: One plate of our ribs, Enjoy

Customer: Sharp suster

I walked back to the kitchen with the dish towel hanging over my shoulder..

Sabs: You doing well mpintshi

I started working at the Pub&Gri 3 days ago. They needed new people and Sabelo being the assistant manager, In charge of the hiring. He hired me, Well after seeing the post on their Facebook page. I personally asked him and he hired me. Me and two other girls..

Me: Thank you for hiring me, I know it seems corrupt but I needed this job

R2000 a month won't be bad, I'm just sitting at home not doing anything so why not get some pocket change money in the meantime..

I don't think Ken knows, He hasn't been around.

I signed the contract etc, Despite what happened between us that day. He can't just fire me on the spot..

MUSA

I watched him as he drove us to the Dr. Apart from how shitty he is, But he means well. He cares and always want what's best for me and Sedi..

I placed my hand on his shoulder, Leveling it up a bit to play with his earlobe. He turned to me with his sleepy eyes and then faced the his front again. He took his hand off the wheel, Took my hand and kissed it then placed both hands interlocked on his thigh.

Me: I'm sorry.. For the phone incident, Shouldn't have let it get drained until it switched it off. The corner of his mouth rose to a smile..

Ken: You apologizing?

Me: Yaa I give you hell most of the time, I know you just trying to protect us. Must not be easy carrying everyone around your shoulders.

Worse only girls

Ken: Eyy if you guys don't cause me a heart attack soon, Then I'll know that I'm strong

Me: I'm truly sorry

He kissed my hand again..



Ken: I know you are

GABISILE

Mandla was busy with the tools...

Me: Hey Power

Mandla: Gabisile

Me: I need a favour

Mandla: Asizwe (Let's hear)

Me: Can I knock off early today? Things is I am

having people around for dinner at 19:00. Just  
wanna get home and see if everything is up to  
standard

Mandla: I don't see why, Plus you've never even  
taken a day off since you've been here

Me: Thank you so much, I appreciate it

Mandla: You welcome

I went to the office to sign off and go home.

.

To be continued

**SEASON FINALE**

61

MUSA

It all went well with the Dr. Just told me I needed a lot of rest and try to avoid stress as much as possible, Since I am closer to my due date..

I still opted for the dinner with Ace and Gabi, I've promised them and I wasn't going to disappoint nor back out..

Ken dropped me off, But didn't stay. He told me that he had to quickly dash out to the Pub&grill it's an emergency, But will be back to fetch me..

I didn't think much of it, Nor stress over the sudden "Emergency". He's been breathing down my neck lately, I wanna be a bit away from him even for 2 seconds..

Me: You cooked all of this?

Gabi: Absolutely not, My sister in law did

Ace showed up from the bedroom just as we were dishing up..

Ace: Musa

Me: Hi

He rubbed his hand on Gabi's back..

Ace: Where is Ken?

Me: He had to dash out to the pub

Ace: He's coming back?

Me: Only when he has to fetch me

Ace: Dammit.. He's putting me under fire, Only  
Man in the presence of two women

Gabi: Agh, Don't be a sexist

Ace: Wasn't meaning it in an offensive way just  
was thinking what contribution will I be doing

Gabi rolled her eyes..

Ace: You can dish up for me, I'll eat while watching TV in the bedroom on the small couch

Gabi: Okay

Ace: Let me quickly go out for a smoke

Gabi: I'll put your food in the bedroom

Ace kissed her on the cheek..

Ace: Ta (Thank you)

I smiled looking at Gabi..

Gabi: Don't start

Me: He truly loves you, I can see it in his eyes

Gabi: He's a great guy, Don't know what I'd do without him. It's hard finding someone who can truly love you, Especially after my traumatic experience with the R-

She paused..

Gabi: With Evelyn

Me: It is hard, Even for me. My mom, Pakiso stabbing me

Gabi: Haven't found him yet?

Me: Not yet

Gabi: Well I don't blame him, After what he did to you. I'd also Slyza and never come back

Me: It is what it is

RUTH

Ken was a bit shocked seeing me working at the pub..

He let me serve the table, I walked out to the



counter. He came closer.. He stood next to me..

Ken: Sabz?

Sabz: Sure bhoza?

Ken: Zkhiphani? (What's going on)

He said that looking at me..

Sabz: Ruth is one of our new waitresses

Ken: I can see that

Sabz: She's been working hard and she's a fast learner

Ken: Is it? Well then do please send me a glass and bottle of whiskey in my office

Sabz: Sharp she'll send it

He walked away..

MUSA

Me: I don't know about going back to school.  
Two kids and a crazy baby daddy

We both laughed..

Me: But it's also hard finding a job with only a

matric certificate

Gabi: I'll talk to Ace, I'm sure he'll find you something

Me: Have to talk to Ken first, You know how he is with his moods

Ace walked in, That was the longest smoking session..

Gabi: I've put your food on the small table in the bedroom, next to the couch

Ace: Thank you.. Musa please do tell Ken he disappointed me by not staying

Me: I will

Ace: Wooh uz'patele namhlanje that's why

Me: Huh?

Ace: He's going handle the cash books

Me: Ohw

Ace: Yaa, I'll see you ladies later

He walked to the bedroom..

RUTH

I knocked holding the tray carefully..

Ken: Come in

I opened and walked in. His PC was in front of him and books..

Me: Here is your whiskey

Ken: Thank you

Me: Anything else?

He looked at me..

Ken: Close the door for 2 seconds so we talk

I went and closed the door..

Ken: Listen I'm sorry about the other day, I was under a lot of stress. It's not easy being a business man

Me: I see

Ken: If we going to do this, Know that I won't have much time for you, I'm one busy human being

Me: I've always understood that, It's not like I wanted you next to me every second

Ken: Are you sure?

Me: Yes

He stood up and went to lock the door..

Ken: Okay then, Let's see how serious you are

He came to me and stretched his hand out to me..

Me: What are you doing?

Ken: I want to fuck

Me: I don't think so

Ken: You do realize no one comes to my office unless called, So you can literally be stuck here for the whole night with me. Grams is going to worry

I looked at the door. I took my chances by standing up and rushing there, He grabbed me by my waist and threw me down..

Me: Ken please.. Don't do this

Ken: I don't know why the fight because you and I are in a relationship now, Aren't we?

He grabbed me from the floor to place me on his long couch..



Me: I don't wanna do this

Ken: You going to do anything I tell you

When he grabbed on my legs, To part them. I realized this was it, This was my reality.

Ken: You are welcome to scream if you wanna try

Thinking of fighting him, He's much stronger than me. I won't win, It'll just make the situation worse and he's very confident in himself about what he's doing. My mind immediately went to my Grandmother, I wanna get out of this situation alive. I don't want my Grandmother having to face the reality of me missing or my dead body dumped somewhere..

My mind had drifted away, Only came back to the present moment when I felt skin to skin contact. Realized he had taken off my pants and was pressing my thighs down.

Ken: Relax, You shaking very bad

I'm shaking because I'm scared, I'm shaking because he was scaring me. One reality that I never thought I'd face, I was facing it right now. Could it also be that Sabz set me up??

MUSA

Gabi and I even went through dessert, With my busy calling Ken to come. His phone just rang to voice mail..

Gabi: Ace and I can drive you back, Or you can sleep over

Me: He said I should call him when I'm done

Gabi: You can sleepover. I'm not comfortable with you being driven at night in your state

Me: I wonder what he's doing. It's 21:30 now

Gabi: These Men and their work, Ace shuts down too when he's working

Me: Do you think he's cheating?

Gabi: Has he shown you signs?

Me: No.. Until tonight, This was out of his routine

Gabi: Don't forget, Me and him don't like each other much or he doesn't like me much

Me: I thought you guys buried the hatchet

She shrugged her shoulders. I'll prepare the guest room for you..

RUTH

Ken didn't even use a condom. He was ontop of me. Having the time of his life, My legs were

still shaking. I wasn't moaning, No screaming just breathing in and out heavy. It's not that it wasn't painful, Nor that he wasn't big enough. I just bit my tongue to not give him the satisfaction. Screaming, Crying, Begging. It's just going to turn him on more. He's mentally out of it, People like him actually get turned on by your pain..

He grabbed both my hands and pinned them on the armrest of the couch just above my head As he continued, He kissed me trying to force his tongue down my throat.. I turned my head on the side, My heart deeply shattered by now. Tears at the verge of falling..

Ken: You so fucken tight baby!

How is this normal for him? How is this actually

turning him on??

MUSA

Gabi: This should fit you

I ignored her.. She grabbed my phone from my hand..

Gabi: Swearing at him through a text will start a fight that will stress you. Didn't you say the Dr said no stressing?

Me: Ken is fucken irresponsible. He knows I need to get home. He knows I need to see Sedi off, He knows Kurai is babysitting

Gabi: Doesn't Sedi sleep with Kurai every night?

Me: That's beside the point

Gabi: Sleep.. We'll get through this in the morning

RUTH

The last of it was him laying on the couch on his back. He had me lie ontop of him, His arm across my back pinning me against him. His hand on my butt, Grabbing on to literally fuck me..

This one in particular I couldn't help cry because it was deep and felt very uncomfortable for me..

With tears streaming down, And a low voice. I  
kept on repeating the words:

"Please stop.. Please stop"

.

To be continued

SEASON FINALE

62

RUTH

Ken had the audacity after what he did, To help  
me get dressed and then drive me home. I  
didn't know what time it was, But my house was  
pitch black. To show that my Grandmother was



sleeping. He kissed me on my cheek..

Ken: Goodnight, I love you.. We'll talk tomorrow

I got out and he waited for me to get to the gate. I took out my own keys, Unlocked the gate and went in. When I locked the gate from inside he drove off..

I dragged my legs to take me to the kitchen door. I unlocked and went in. I thought Grams was sleeping, I heard her bedroom door opening..

Grams: Ruth

Me: It's me

Grams: Ohh Thank God I was so worried about you, You have never been this late

Me: I know.. I'm sorry

Grams: Are you okay?

Me: I'm okay

Grams: Please switch on the light, I can't see

Me: I'm going to bed Koko, I'll switch on my flash light

I switched on my phone's flashlight and walked

her to her bedroom first..

Me: Goodnight Koko

Grams: I don't think I like your job Ruth, If you going to come in late

Me: I know.. I quit before leaving

Grams: You'll find something else

Me: I know Koko.. Goodnight

MUSA

I kept on tossing and turning, Trying to attain a

comfortable position. I couldn't.

Ken called, I answered..

Me: Hello

Ken: You sound sleepy

Me: Is it? I didn't realize

I could hear the car moving..

Ken: I lost track of time, I'm very sorry but I'm on my way to get you

Me: I'm sleeping in the guest room

Ken: So?

Me: Ace and Gabi are already sleeping, I was about to sleep too. You'll fetch me in the morning

Ken: Kanti mina did I say I'll cause iVur vai there and disturb the peace? I'm just coming there to pick you up that's all

Me: You'll fetch me in the morning, You the one who decided to lose track of time

I hung up. He called again, I just looked at the phone until he canceled the call then sent a message:

"Okay.. I'll fetch you tomorrow morning, First thing in the morning. I'm sorry about tonight, I hate fighting with you. I love you Sthandwa Sam, Nilale sharp"

RUTH

To say I couldn't sleep would be an understatement. Each time I tried to sleep, The movie of what happened would start.

I wanted to take a bath that night but I couldn't, Didn't wanna stress Grams out..

I only was able to pass out in the early hours of the morning, To be awoken later by a knock at my door..

I opened. It was Grams..

Koko: Ruru.. Your friend is here to see you

Jabu walked in...

Jabu: Thank you Koko

I closed the door and turned to her..

Jabu: And then? It's 11:00am now

I started crying..

Jabu: What's wrong?

Me: Ken.. Ken raped me last night

Jabu: Whaaaaaaat??

Me: Not so loud. I don't wanna alert Koko

Jabu: What do you mean he raped you? How did it happen?

Me: In his office

Jabu: Shuuuuuu.. Are you sure? I mean you been wanting this guy, Now he has raped you? In his office with customers and his staff around?



Me: Jabu it happened.. It was not.. I even asked him to stop

Jabu: Did you tell anyone about this?

Me: Not yet

Jabu: Good.. This will end up between you and I

Me: No.. We need to go to the police station, I haven't bathe and to the clinic

Jabu: Uyahlanya? (Are you insane) we talking about Ken here not just a random guy. Ken is well connected, He's dangerous and he will come after you and your fam. You want him to make your life difficult? Wena geza, Text him to

send you money for the Dr. We get there, You get Pep and everything then you forget about this

Me: Jabu

Jabu: Listen to me.. Ken is going to destroy you, Ken has a pregnant girlfriend, You really think that he's going to allow you to ruin his life and family?

She took my phone..

Jabu: Here.. Text him, Don't say a lot of things you just need money to get a morning after pill that's all!

MUSA

He walked in, I was eating breakfast..

Ace was watching TV..

Ken: Ekse

Ace: Sure

He looked at me..

Ken: Are you ready to go?

Me: Yaa

Ken: Where is Gabi?

Me: She went to work already

Ken: Ohw.. I see, Get your things so we go

He looked at Ace..

Ken: Thank you Ntwana

Ace: No stress

He took out his phone from his pocket, I think it was a text message because he read it for a while..

Ken: Baby fetch your things, There's a transaction I have to do for Sabelo

I got up from the chair to go fetch my bag..

RUTH

I was pacing up and down in the bedroom, There was a moment of awkward silence between Jabu and I. My phone beeped. It was a notification, He had sent me 1.3k

Me: He sent it

Jabu: Good.. Go bath so we leave

Me: Okay

Jabu: Look.. You going to get through this Ruru, Just keep your mouth shut. Ken actually has alliances there at the police station

Me: If you know so much about him, Why the hell didn't you tell me about him

Jabu: Such files about Ken you don't release. I'm still confused at "He raped me" Dude I thought you wanted him. You had a crush on him. Ken is everything but I've never heard he actually raped a woman

Me: I'm done talking to you about this

Jabu: Kodwa umuntu wakho nje (He's your person)

Me: He is not my person Jabu! He never was

Jabu: You entertained him njena

Me: That gave him no right to do what he did last night, You also confusing me right now

Jabu: Okay.. Askies ke

KEN

Ace walked us out. Musa got into the car..

Musa: Bye Ace

Ace: Bye Ntokazi

I closed her door..

Ace: I don't like what you doing to this poor girl

Me: Huh?

Ace: Emergency at the Pub? Khula nini Ntwana?  
(When are you going grow up)

I looked at Musa, She was on her phone..

Me: I just got pussy last night, Wasn't that deep  
it's not like I was going to marry the one night  
stand



Ace: Your woman is pregnant, She was worried about you last night. Kanti ucabanga njani?  
(How the hell do you think)

Me: Yazi I have a headache from the whiskey I drank last night, Nawe you making it worse.  
Sharp Ntwana

I walked to the car..

.

To be continued

SEASON FINALE

63

RUTH

[A WEEK LATER]

I was not in my best state. Having to deal and keep such deep within me, Was breaking me slowly. Not forgetting how heavy the meds were.. I did feel guilty, I wanted this man at some point. I just didn't think Ken was one of those guys. I've always thought stable guys were decent and smart, I guess I was wrong..

Grams: Ruru what's wrong with you, You haven't been yourself lately. You sleep early, Wake up late. You always tired and feeling down. Is it about your job? I thought we both agreed that the job was too dangerous

Me: It's not that Grams

I drink the pills at night..

Me: I just.. I was thinking about my life lately.  
I'm not happy with where it is

Grams: Don't be too hard on yourself, Things  
will get better

She looked at me..

Grams: You look sick like you haven't slept

I wasn't sick, I was hungover. I lock myself in  
my room and drink wine. I live in fear, Going  
outside I have to look both left and right, Make  
sure Ken is not around..

Me: I know Grams but I'll be fine

Grams: I'm going to meet up with the women from church, Sokhalisa

Me: Ohw yaa I forgot about the church member that passed on

Grams: I'll be back, Do take it easy

Me: I will.. Just call me to lock when you leave, I'll be in my bedroom

Grams: Okay, Vele lock it's too quiet during the day it's not safe

Me: I will

ACE

I was at the pub & grill having a meal..

Sabz: Coca cola

Me: Ta Ntwana

He started to sort out the glasses.. Whilst looking at me..

Me: And then?

Sabz: Bhoza yam may I please have a word with

you?

Me: Ya sure.. K'hambani? (What's wrong)

Sabz: Shuthi wena Bhoza we hired some girls to work here, The was one from my street. uRuth, She's just 24

Me: Okay?

Sabz: She quit.. Before that she sent me multiple texts swearing at me, Telling me I set her up

Me: I am not sure what that has to do with me

Sabz: She says Ken.. Umskebhile (She said Ken

raped her)

Me: Uthini? (What are you saying)

Sabz: I believe her because that day Ken asked her to bring him a bottle of wh-

I took out my wallet and left R200 on the table..

Me: Sharp Sabz

Sabz: Bhoza ungayithi vuu kuye umnumzane  
(Don't tell him)

Me: I'm not a fool wena maan

KEN

I held her hand. She lowered her oxygen....

Mom: Ken

Me: Hi

Mom: It's good to see you

Me: I've been meaning to come but got busy

Mom: It's okay

She closed her eyes and then opened them again..



Me: The center didn't call me and tell me you sick

Mom: I told them to call you when I'm dead

Me: Mom

She gave me a weak smile..

Mom: You killed me long time ago remember?  
Don't even bury me. Cremate me

Me: You not dying

Mom: Where is Kurai?

Me: She said she's going to come tomorrow

Mom: Okay

Me: My girlfriend is pregnant, About to give birth soon

She looked at me..

Mom: How do you feel about that?

Me: I am nervous and excited too, That's why I want you to get better so you can meet your Granddaughter and your future daughter in law

Mom: Well there's a reason for me to live

MUSA

I was helping Aneni hang the laundry..

Aneni: You shouldn't even be helping

Me: It's good exercise

Aneni: Well don't overdo it

I heard the dogs barking..

Me: I'll check

I went to check, It was Ace standing at the gate..  
With his car parked..

I walked up to him..

Me: Ace

Ace: Musa

Me: Ken is not here, He went to the pub

Ace: Really?

Me: Yes

Ace: Actually I'm here to talk to you

Me: Talk to me?

Ace: It'll only take a second

Me: Okay.. I'll open for you

I called out to Aneni to open the gate whilst I mind the dogs...

KEN

I called him again, He didn't pick up.. I texted him:

"Ace where are you Man? Muddha has been

trying to reach you. Call me!!"

I looked at my Mom..

Me: Ma I have to go, I'll see you tomorrow with Kurai

Mom: Okay

I kissed her on the forehead..

Me: I love you

Mom: I love you too baby

MUSA

Aneni stood by the doorway of the kitchen..

We were sitting in the lounge..

Ace: I was here to kill Ken, But that would be an easy way out for him

Me: I.. I don't understand

Ace: Sit down

He was looking at Aneni.. Aneni came and sat down. I was also starting to get scared..

Ace: Do you know the kind of man that you with?

Me: Ace what exactly are you doing here? You scaring me

Ace: I'm scaring you? When your Man raped my wife!

Me: What?

Ace: That night when you came to our house for dinner. He was at the pub yeah, But not working busy raping a 24 year old girl who was working there

Aneni: This is enough accusations fo-

Aneni stood up..



Ace: Sit the fuck down!!!!

She sat down..

Ace: Pakiso is dead!! Despite your plea Ken put a bounty on his head. I can even take you to his unmarked grave in the graveyard

Me: Ohh my word

Ace: That's the kind of man that you with

He stood up..

Ace: Ohw.. He is the one behind your Mother's

house getting burned down to ashes. There was no Umlilo waba phantsi. That healer he took you too, Was a witch doctor!!.. That's the man you going to have a future with!! A serial rapist!!

He walked out..

I grabbed on tightly to Aneni's arm..

Me: I don't feel well.. I feel dizzy like I'm going to pass out

Aneni: Let's try to calm down

Me: I can't calm down!! Aneni didn't you hear what he said??

Aneni: I heard

I looked at her..

Me: Ohh my goodness.. You not even shocked.  
You know the type of person that he is, I let you  
near my child

I slowly got up, To go and pack..

Me: Do not follow me!!

.

To be continued

SEASON FINALE

KEN

I picked it up from the side of the road and looked at it. I've been here for almost 15min now, Searching for it. All the while I thought she was involved in an accident of some sort but in actual fact, She had taken off the bracelet. How did she do it?..

Voice: Got here as soon as I could

I got up and turned around looking at him..

Me: Maurice

Maurice: What's happening?

I glanced down at the bracelet..

Me: I lost my family

Maurice: What happened?

I shook my head fighting back tears..

Me: I've called for you so you can help track her and bring her back

I sighed..

Me: If she doesn't come back, I'm scared that I am going to self destruct and do things that I

don't wanna do. I'm hurting, And when I hurt it gets ugly

Maurice: We going to bring her back

Me: She's my world Maurice, At least she was. She has given me all the reasons to live and try to be a better version of myself. I lose her, I am going to lose myself too

Maurice: I understand, It's going to be alright.. I'll get her back.. I promise

Me: She has nowhere to go

Maurice: I'm going to use all the resources available to me so I can track her. For now, I

need you to relax and be calm

Me: We'll see

MUSA

Have you ever been through so much pain that you felt like your soul was leaving your body? That's exactly how I felt. I had interruptions where my breathing was concerned. I didn't know what made sense and what didn't make sense..

My phone was off, Didn't feel like talking to anyone at this time. I was losing it, What was left of my sanity I was losing it..

I kept on pacing up and down in the bedroom,  
Then I'd sit down too.. Trying to catch my  
breath. I've been through so much lately, So  
much that I saw no other possibility but wish  
death upon myself.

Ken has betrayed me, More than anyone has  
ever betrayed me before. I felt like I was staring  
death right in front of me, I felt defeated.  
Nothing made sense anymore and I've never  
wanted to die in my life like how I wanted to die  
now...

GABISILE

Me: Ace wait!!

Ace: Can't wait, Can't do it.. You will go live with



my family for a while until it is safe for you to come back

Me: You promised me that you knew what you were doing and that he wouldn't come after us

Ace: He won't come after us, He'll come after you

Me: I can't just up and leave, I have work

Ace: Dammit Gabi!! You don't work overseas, I'll have someone drive you to work and then drive you home

I exhaled in frustration..

Ace: Please.. You need to trust me on this one,  
If he gets to you for the second time. I won't  
forgive myself

I haven't seen him this anxious..

Me: Fine.. I'll go live at your family house

Ace: Thank you

I went to pack..

KURAI

When my Dad got out of the car, I ran straight to  
his arms. I was trembling. After Ken shot Aneni,  
I looked into her eyes. I saw life being sucked

out of her eyes..

I saw her eyes getting cold and that look will forever haunt me..

I know there's a loose screw somewhere in his brain, But exposing me to this? That was cold..

My Dad and I, We've always had a broken relationship but at this moment. That didn't matter, Just needed to feel that security..

Dad: Where is he?

Me: He's gone for now

Kodessa came out, I moved from my Dad to

Kodessa. She hugged me..

Kodessa: It's okay.. It's okay

Dad: Just stay with Kodessa for a while, I'll be back

He walked into the house..

KEN

I drove back to the pub and locked myself in my office. I had a bottle of whiskey and I was still trying to trace Musa. Her phone was off..

Me: Come on!!

My phone rang, It was Masole..

Me: Tell me something I need to know

Masole: She's at her Aunt's place

Me: Aunt's place?

Masole: I will send you the address

Me: Thank you so much

Masole: Always at your service

Me: I'll transfer your payment

Masole: Glad I could help

I hung up..

At least I found her..

.

To be continued

SEASON FINALE

64

MUSA

I packed up everything that belonged to me.  
Including Lesedi's things. Aneni was trying her

hardest to calm me down, Trying her hardest to make me see reason. There was no reason and explanation that was going to help see this situation differently than how it was. Ken is not sick, He's a monster. A soon to be father of a girl, My puke choked me at the thought of what he could've possibly done to Lesedi..

I went to fetch Lesedi from daycare, Then I pulled up on the side as tears streamed down. I looked at the bracelet, I couldn't get it off. The only option was to break my thumb so it could slide off my arm. I took a cloth and put it in my mouth so I don't make much noise for Lesedi and scare her who was sitting at the back..

This was going to be difficult, Causing myself such an extreme pain but it was for all the right reasons..

GABISILE

Ace came to take me out for lunch.. Ace taking me out for lunch randomly is not a norm, He was even awfully quiet at the table..

Me: Something on your mind?

Ace: Not really

Me: You didn't have to take me out for lunch, Clearly there's something on your mind

Ace: I'm going to ask you something, I need your honesty



I looked at him, He was serious...

Ace: Did Ken rape you?

I felt chills running down my spine..

Ace: I read your diary

Me: No... You didn't

Ace: I did.. You never mentioned who it was but it was him right?

Me: You had no right

Ace: I had every right, Seeing that there's things

you are hiding from me

Me: It was a while back, I didn't tell you because I closed that chapter. I didn't tell you because.. When people view what happened, They view it like I had asked for it. I felt guilty more than pain because I did felt something for him

Ace: When a man forces himself on you that's rape. Doesn't matter if you wanted him, Doesn't matter if you were naked or drunk

Me: I closed that chapter and moved on

Ace: I see

Me: What have you done Ace? You didn't kill

him right? You agitated.. It's not like you

Ace: I didn't kill him, Guys like Ken death would be a peaceful transition for him. Easy way out

Me: What did you do?

Ace: I told Musa everything

Me: What?

Ace: He raped another girl.. That night when he didn't show up for dinner, He was violating another girl. She's 24

Me: What is wrong with that guy?

Ace: Ken losing Musa would hit him hard, Ken dying would be heaven for him

I tapped my fingers on the table..

Me: What if he comes after me?

Ace: I have enough dirt on him to bury him, He won't. Plus I'm a hitman remember? I have contacts, Contacts he wouldn't wanna go face to face with

Me: Did you actually think about this?

Ace: I did, Hence why I did it

Me: Nightmare all over again, Just when my life was starting to be peaceful

Ace: Just trust me okay?

RUTH

I walked to the corner busy checking out my surroundings. I was scared, I was shit scared.. I was going to buy something to eat..

It wasn't full, So at least I won't have to stand there for a long time..

The owner wasn't around, Just his assistant..

Xola: Ruthie.. Ruth

Me: Eyy Xola

I took out the R50..

Xola: Only grilled chicken

Me: It's fine

Xola: A full plate

Me: Yes please

I handed him the R50..

Xola: uGrand mpintshi? (Are you okay)

Me: Yeah ngi grand

I sat down and was busy on my phone whilst waiting..

After sometime when I lifted my eyes up, I saw a familiar car pulling up..

I got up from the chair, And made my way to Xola. Inside the container..

I stood out of sight, Trembling..

Xola looked at me..

Voice: Eyy Xola

Xola: Sure Ken

Ken: Ngifuna le yakho (I want your boss)

Xola: He's out to buy some stock

Ken: Sharp.. I thought I saw Ruth

Xola: Naa that's the lady who works here,  
Tholakele

Ken: I see.. Tshela le yakho I was looking for  
him, But now I'm headed home I'll come back  
later Ngabo past



Xola: I'll tell him

He left.. Xola didn't say anything until I heard the car leave..

Xola: You scared of him?

Me: Yaa

Xola: What happened? Because I heard uJabu saying wena no Ken are an item that's how you even got a job at the pub

Me: We not an item.. He raped me

Xola: Ini? (What)

Me: Please don't tell anyone

Xola: Did you go to the police? Open a case?

Me: No.. We talking about Ken here, Guys like him don't get arrested

Xola: Very true.. Bastard has connections there, Actually when you go there, They might arrest you and say you spitting out false rape allegations

Me: I just need a job, Something. So I can move away from this hood

Xola: Naa skeem, You won't let him dictate your life. I know uyahlupha but one thing he won't take you by force in a public space or attack you, But he's going to be persistent in running after you

Me: I want him to leave me alone

Xola: Mtshele (Tell him)

Me: Are you insane?

Xola: How will he back off if you don't make it clear to him? Kuye he probably thinks that you okay and you guys are okay

Me: He raped me!!!!

Xola: I'm not saying he didn't nor am I saying it was right, I'm saying kuye he might not see it that way until you actually tell him to back off. If he persists then uyahlanya

I exhaled..

Xola: Take a chair and sit inside, When uTholakele comes back, I'll walk you home  
Skeem

MUSA

The only place that I could think of, Was my Aunt's place..

By how I pulled up, She knew something was wrong.. I didn't talk directly when I got in, I just cried for a while.. She thought it was because of my Mom's house, When I had calmed down. I told her the whole truth..

She kept quiet for a long time, Because she didn't know what to say..

Aunt: Musa!! What are you telling me?

Me: I don't know what I got myself into

Aunt: I am not blaming you but didn't you see the signs?

Me: He was just another man with a bit of anger

here and there, Never thought much of it

Aunt: You need to go to the police and tell everything, You even broke your thumb to get away

Me: No.. We not going to the police

Aunt: I know he's is the father of your child Musa but don't protect him

Me: I'm not protecting him Aunty, I actually hate him but didn't you hear what I told you? Ken is one not to be messed with. If he can confidently hurt women and do all these things don't you think he has protection from the cops?

Aunt: Listen here, Ken is not God. He's not a ghost either. He's not immortal Musa, He's a human being. He bleeds too. Plus this Pakiso situation, It's going to Bury him

Me: He can easily deny Auntie we don't even have proof. It's his word against mine

Aunt: I do understand

Me: I am confused, I can't even think straight

Aunt: I know.. Let me get my heat rub ointment and bandage so we can see what we do with your thumb

KEN

I got home, Aneni and Kurai looked jumpy and started whispering when I walked to the bedroom..

I saw a letter on the bed, I took it and read it..

My heart sank at what was written, I sat down on the bed continuing. She wrote everything that she was told, Then wrote how much she hates me. How much I disgust her. I felt a pain stinging my heart when she ended the letter with "I am gone, I never wanna see you ever again".

I got up and checked the wardrobe, Indeed she was gone. Some of her things with Lesedi were missing. I took my phone and tracked her



bracelet, Showed me a location just by the high way. I panicked, She wasn't moving.. Probably had an accident or something

I grabbed my gun and walked out of the bedroom, I should've fucken put a tracker on my other car that she's using..

I walked out calling Maurice, The detective.

Kurai: Ken where are you going?

Me: Not now Kurai

Kurai: B-

Me: I said not now!!!

I hung up as it took me to voicemail. I opened the kitchen door but didn't go out, I turned and went back to the lounge looking at Aneni..

Me: How does a pregnant woman escape from your care? Why didn't you call me before she took off?

She didn't say anything..

Me: You let her leave didn't you?

Aneni: I didn't sign up for this when I started working for you

I pointed the gun at her and shot her..

Kurai screamed..

I shot her 3 times..

Me: Call Dad, Tell him to come alone. Pack a few things and go stay over at Dad's for a while

I turned and walked out of the house, I texted Ace out of anger and not even getting shit right. That's how angry and scared I was..

"I hope lento oyenzile, Uzoyimela (I hope you will stand for what you've done"

.

To be continued

Thank you for checking up on me, I will be fine. I promise ❤️

SEASON FINALE

66

KURAI

Kodessa and I drove back to my father's house, Leaving my father at Ken's house..

I was still traumatized from what happened. Couldn't stop shaking.. My heart was beating fast and I couldn't breath..

Kodessa: We need to get you to a therapist

Me: I don't wanna see one

Kodessa: This is going to haunt you

Me: I know but how do I explain to the therapist what happened?

Kodessa: It's hard I know, But if you don't go for help. You are going to suffer a great deal mentally

Me: I just wanna sleep for a while and forget about this reality

(Silence)

Me: Do you have sleeping pills?

Kodessa: Yeah.. Sure

Me: Thank you

GABISILE

It's not that I hate my in laws, I just feel like we have a good distant relationship. Having to live with them, For a while?? I don't know.

Ace got us into this situation, I can only imagine what Musa is going through. She's pregnant for goodness sake!!

Ace: Ngiyabonga Ma (Thank you Ma)

Ma: uKoti is always welcome here

Ace: I know

I faked a smile..

It's just my Mother in law and her Grandkids.  
Now I'll be subjected and obligated to help with  
the kids. I don't have a problem with that, Just  
that.. I have a demanding job and I need rest  
from time to time..

Ace: Let me talk to you for a second

We went outside.. He held both my hands and  
kissed them..

Ace: I'm sorry about this, I know it's hard but I promise I'm going to always keep you safe

Me: No.. I want you to fix this mess. I wanna come back home, To my house and my husband

Ace: I know.. I'm going to fix it

Me: Soon

Ace: Soon

He pulled me closer for a hug and then kissed me..

Ace: I love you so much



Me: I love you too

MUSA

Every knock made my heart jump..

Ken: I know you in there Musa.. Open the door, I just wanna talk

Aunt: He's here and demanding to enter.. We don't know, The door is locked!!

Me: What are they saying?

Aunt: Shh.. Sorry Mama uthini? (Pardon)

How did he find us? He doesn't know about my Aunt. My phone is off..

Ken: Musa!!!

Sedi was sleeping on the couch..

Aunt: Please we need help now

We had to call the police, We had no choice..

My Aunt lowered her phone and hung up..

Me: What are they saying?

Aunt: They coming.. Well I'm not sure but I think they are

He broke the door down, Unfortunately my Aunt's security door doesn't lock.. I moved closer to my Aunt scared..

We were in the living room, My knees were getting weak...

He showed up holding his gun. My heart sank..

He exhaled loudly before saying anything..

Ken: Sorry to show up here unexpected, About the door.. I'll have it fixed

We said nothing..

Ken: I know a lot of shit is happening and has happened, But we can fix it. We can just go home and fix everything

Me: I..

I cleared my throat..

Me: I'm not leaving

Aunt: She's close to giving birth, She has to be with an elder

Ken: We can fix that, We can get a midwife. I just need my family back

Aunt: Musa just needs some br-

His phone rang. He took it out and looked at it.  
He answered still looking at us..

Ken: Hello.. This is he.. Whaaaaaaat?

He banged his gun against his forehead..

Ken: Thank you for letting me know

He hung up..

Ken: My Mom passed on this morning

Me: I thought your Mother passed on a long time ago

Ken: Let's go home

Me: How many lies have you told me Ken? How much more?.. This is not healthy!! We not healthy for each other!!

Ken: We are perfect for each other!!

Me: No we not!!

Aunt: You need to leave Son.. The police are on the way

Ken: You called the Police?

Aunt: Yes.. If you love Musa you'll leave please,  
Come back when you in a better state to talk..  
Just not now Son

Ken: Okay.. I'll come back

He turned and walked away..

My Aunt and I looked at each other, And we got  
relieved.. Though that was an immature thing to  
do, Because he turned right back and shot my  
Aunt..

I screamed as I saw her falling down..

I looked at him shaking, With urine running

down my legs.. My hands on my mouth..

Ken: I guess now the situation is more fucked  
hey

Tears streamed down his face..

Ken: Well then what the fuck?? We can't be  
together in this lifetime. Maybe on the next  
lifetime we will

He pointed the gun at me..

Me: Ken please.. Don't!!

RUTH



Grams: Weeh Ruth.. Come here

I went to her, She was watching TV..

Grams: As I was passing by ngale ekhoneni, I heard you were sitting there

Me: I went to buy food

Grams: I heard you were sitting with the gang there abo Xola as they were smoking drugs, And you were smoking too

Me: That's not true

Grams: Heard you were sitting there for an hour and then you were so high that Xola brought you back

Me: I'm not high Grandma!! Do I look high to you??

Grams: What's happening with you lately? I don't understand you

Me: Ohh my God I can't catch a flippin break!! I'm on drugs, I got raped!! Can I just breath??

Grams: What did you just say?

I ran off to my room..

Grams: Ruth!!!

Me: Just leave me alone please.. Do you want me to kill myself?!

ACE

After hearing the news from Sabz, I drove up to the hood.. I couldn't believe what I heard. It cannot be..

I parked and got out of the car, I rushed to the scene. There was a crowd already outside, Police, And medical personnels..

I saw three body bags coming out and a female cop who was holding Lesedi..

I went closer to the other cop..

Me: Sergeant

He looked at me..

Me: What.. What happened here?

Cop: Are you family?

Me: Sort off

Cop: Murder suicide

Me: Murder what?

Cop: Two women and a man, One woman was pregnant. She was shot 4 times. 2 bullets in the tummy, Two at close range. On her neck then he had a wound on his right temple, Blew his brains out

I immediately walked away to my car. I took off my cap..

Me: What have I done?? What have I done??

Musa didn't deserve this, None of this should've happened to her..

.

To be continued

FINALE

67

RUTH

[YEARS LATER]

I looked at my husband, He smiled at me..I then looked at the room full of people, The Mic in front of me..

Me: My name is Ruth and I'm here to tell my story

The audience went dead silent..

Me: a few years ago I was sexually violated, By a man that I had an interest in. Took me a while to come out because of the fear of not being believed and also the fear of being judged. He didn't threaten me, He didn't held me at gunpoint. He simply asked me to bring him a drink in his office since I was working for him. That's how he violated me

I paused a little..

Me: After the whole ordeal, My closest friend didn't believe me. Which made me mentally conflicted if it happened or not. At the age I was, I knew all the signs and dangers of sexual violations and I felt stupid that such an act happened to me. I lived with it, for years. The pills I took reminded me everyday of what happened. I was scared to tell because he was

a dangerous person, I feared for my life

I cleared my throat..

Me: I spent years trying to put my mental state back together again, He took something from me that I will never get back. At the same time, He took my trust in men

I looked at my husband..

Me: Despite it all, I am married today to a man who first had to pay for the sins of another man. Just because I didn't scream my lungs out, Just because I went to his office, Just because he didn't threaten me. It doesn't mean that the was consent



They started clapping..

Me: My book is dedicated to all the women, All the girls who have been through such a terrifying ordeal and I wanna say. I believe you

They all stood up and continued clapping, I moved away and walked up to my husband as the MC took over..

Husband: I'm so proud of you

He hugged me tight and kissed me on my cheek..

Husband: Very proud of you

That day when I found out that Ken died, It should've been a relief for me but.. Ken deserved more than death, He deserved suffering first for everything he's done..

Other than that, My life has been a blessing. After all the therapy and working on myself, I married a life coach and currently just published a book that details my tragic encounter with Ken. Unfortunately my Grandmother passed on, But she left me in good hands. She passed on a year after I got married.. I have never been this happy before.. We don't have kids yet, Hoping time is still on my side

LESEDI

Ace: Go on

I exhaled whilst holding the flowers and walked to her grave. I placed them down and crouched looking at her marble tombstone head..

"In the loving memory of Musa Mhlongo

A Daughter

Sister

Mother

Lala ngoxolo, You will always be remembered and forever live in our hearts"

I fixed my glasses..

Me: Last week I got letters from 2 universities. They accepted me, The other one for

psychology and the other one for Medicine. I am taking the one for medicine so I can specialize in Psychiatry. Uncle Ace says it's good for me but I wanna study criminal psychology, Get in the minds of Psychopaths so I can help women get out of toxic relationships or at least get justice. So they can see the signs and get out whilst it's still early. Uncle Ace says it's going to mess with my mind

I looked at the pins on my blazer..

Me: I am the top student at school in all grade 12s. Top achiever in maths, physics, English and life sciences. I've passed my June exams with As in those subjects and the rest of them I got Bs. I'm even doing a foreign language, French. It's good but a bit difficult. I'm doing 10 subjects in total. It's a very expensive private

school but also produces the best. My teachers say I have a high IQ

I looked at my Uncle..

Me: I have to go, I am happy. Aunty Gabi is the best.. I love you

I got up and dusted my knees and walked to the car..

Ace: How are you feeling?

Me: I don't know if she hears me

Ace: She does

Me: I don't see how

He laughed..

Ace: Private school neh?

Me: Private school

He opened the door for me and I got in..

Me: I know you and Aunty Gabi are going to buy me a car after my final exams

He sighed and held on to the door..

Ace: How did you figure that out?

Me: When I was fixing her laptop, I saw the Email

Ace: Okay bheka, She's really excited about this so can we act surprised?

Me: I can

Ace: Put it here skeem

He gave me a fist bump...

Ace: McDonald's?

Me: Rocomamas

Ace: Okay watch yourself baby

He closed the door..

I don't remember much about my life when I was young. I was raised by my Aunt Gabi, Kurai and My Uncle Ace. I'm 20 now doing matric, I lost a few years in primary because I had to undergo a lot therapy. Delayed speech etc.

They only told me about my mother when I was 16, After my therapist noticed that I actually had a high IQ. Close to being a genius and she was confident that I could handle it..



They have other two kids, My younger brothers.  
They not twins just 4 years apart.

Other than what I was told about my Mother, I  
have a beautiful life. One that other kids would  
dream of. Expensive school, I get all that I want.  
Both my legal guardians love me as if like I was  
their biological child. Especially my Uncle Ace

I am not religious, I believe in science but I am  
sure that some cosmic power up there is truly  
watching over me..

MUSA (Another life)

I stood there and watched the car driving away.  
I heard a voice behind me..

Mom: It's time.. She's alright now

I was never able to cross over until I made sure that Lesedi was okay. Gabi adopting her legally after what happened, I showed up to her in a dream. Ace didn't hesitate nor deny the adoption because he felt guilty.

It was a process but my bleeding heart cried out to God everyday for my Daughter and I am glad that my death was avenged through beautiful karma, With Lesedi having a less traumatic life..

She's so beautiful, Calm, Well spoken, Ontop of her class and a very obedient child.

She comes to my grave every month and her actually talking to me started last month.

Seeing and hearing that she's okay and in good hands, And that her future is also looking bright. I can finally rest in peace.. Lesedi is a true Nerd and an introvert, So much she doesn't believe in us. Her not believing didn't stop me from making sure that she was okay. I have another child in the after life, But I needed to make sure this one is okay first..

As I approached my Mother and my other daughter in the light my appearance changed from gloomy to glowing..

I held my Daughter's hand.. Then looked at my Mother..

Me: Where are we going?

Mom: In paradise

Me: Ken?

Mom: Ken is in purgatory, In the pit of lost souls. He'll be there until judgment day tormented and without rest, It's his fate

Me: Lesedi is going to be okay

Mom: She already is. All that happened had too so she could be where she is today, I know you think she doesn't believe in your existence in the after life but she does

Me: She does?

Mom: For the first time she said I love you

I smiled and looked at the sky. The sun was there but it started raining..

Mom: She's okay

GABISILE

Kurai: I think it's raining, You should tell the boys to get out of the pool

Me: I didn't even see

Kurai: Isn't Sedi supposed to be back from school?

Me: She went to visit Musa's grave

Kurai: Ohw I forgot

She looked at me..

Kurai: You okay?

Me: Crazy as it might sound but I've always felt Musa close by and watching over us. All of a sudden, I feel like she's gone

Kurai: I'm sure she's still watching over you guys

She looked at the time..

Kurai: I would pack her bag but you know she's particular

Lesedi has known nothing but love. From me and Ace, To Kurai and her family. A part of me is happy that what happened, Happened when she was young. If she was older she probably wouldn't have recovered. She doesn't remember much of her childhood other than what we've told her and I'm happy because she can live her life without any existing trauma..

Kurai got everything that belonged to her brother and every month she contributes 20-25k for Lesedi, She loves her just as much. A great Aunty that she is too

Me: Let me get the boys from the pool, And  
please make sure Sedi studies when you guys  
get home since she's visiting you for holidays.  
Her finals are around the corner

Kurai: She's a nerd Gabi, All she knows is books  
what do you think ? That I'll be taking her to  
Konka?

Me: I know you

Kurai: Ace would kill me, You know he loves that  
kiddo more than anything

I laughed..



I approached the sliding door, Suddenly I felt a chill run down my spine. A cold breeze passed through and the hairs at the back of my neck stood up. I turned around

"Thank you friend"

I didn't see her but I did hear her voice. I smiled..

I saw a small white light passing by until it disappeared. Musa thinks that I changed Lesedi's life but Lesedi changed my life too in a beautiful way and I love her so much.

.

..... THE END.....